# Darboux Transformations, Discrete 

Integrable Systems and Related Yang-Baxter Maps

Sotiris Konstantinou-Rizos


Department of Applied Mathematics
University of Leeds

Submitted in accordance with the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

The candidate confirms that the work submitted is his own, except where work which has formed part of jointly-authored publications has been included. The contribution of the candidate and the other authors to this work has been explicitly indicated below. The candidate confirms that appropriate credit has been given within the thesis where reference has been made to the work of others.

- Chapter 5 is based on S. Konstantinou-Rizos and A.V. Mikhailov, "Darboux transformations, finite reduction groups and related Yang-Baxter maps", Journal of Physics A 46 (2013), 425201.

The construction of Yang-Baxter maps by matrix refactorisation problems of Darboux matrices was my original idea which we accomplished with the co-author, A.V. Mikhailov, for all the cases of finite reduction groups with two-dimensional representation. The contribution was equal. Moreover, I wrote the first draft of the paper which, after the co-author's amendments, was brought to a publishable form.

This copy has been supplied on the understanding that it is copyright material and that no quotation from the thesis may be published without proper acknowledgement.
(c) 2014 The University of Leeds and Sotiris Konstantinou-Rizos

To my parents, Anastasia and Giorgos

## Acknowledgements

Doing a PhD is a hard job, but at the same time it can become a pleasant experience if you have the right people around you. Therefore, from this position, I would like to thank all the people who contributed -one way or another- to making it happen.

Above all, I would like to thank my supervisor, Alexander Mikhailov, for his guidance and for being patient throughout my PhD studies. He has the experience and ability to tell you straightaway if your ideas can work, which is very useful for a research student. Moreover, he encouraged me to participate in many conferences from which I benefited a lot. His constructive criticism on my research made me mature as a mathematician and for that I am most grateful. At this point, I would also like to thank my adviser, Frank Nijhoff, for his interest and for setting the guidelines in our yearly meetings.

I am greatly indebted to the University of Leeds for granting me the William Wright Smith scholarship and to J.E. Crowther for the scholarship-contribution to fees. Moreover, I extend grateful thanks to the school of Mathematics for the financial support during my writing-up period and for financing all the conferences in which I participated; I feel that it was the ideal enviroment for postgraduate studies, in a very well-organised University which I would highly recommend to any graduate student. It was also very beneficial to be part of the integrable systems group, with weekly seminars and many other research activities. Many thanks are also due to Alastair Rucklidge and Jeanne Shuttleworth for welcoming me here in the school and for being very helpful over these years.

However, my postgraduate studies started in Greece, at the Univeristy of Patras, and therefore there are several people who contributed to building my maths background.

First of all, I was very lucky to do my Master's thesis under the supervision of Dimitris Tsoubelis. He is the person who introduced me to the theory of PDEs and, in general, to Mathematical Physics, and he has been an enormous source of knowledge and experience for me ever since. But more importantly, he taught me how to study mathematics myself, how to write mathematical texts and research proposals and several other things which I use daily in my research. Working with him is a pleasure, and he is a person who I always seek advice from at any stage of my career. Therefore, I would like to thank him for
supporting my studies in several ways. He and his wife, Eudokia Papafotopoulou, have been very kind to me and for that I am most grateful.

I would also like to thank Vassilis Papageorgiou for his interest throughout these years and for contributing into building my theoretical background during both my undergraduate and postgraduate studies. He is always happy to discuss mathematics with me and he is always willing to help me. Moreover, he and his wife, Eugénie Foustoucos, had helped me to come here in Leeds in the beginning of my studies for which I am very grateful as well as for their continuous interest in my progress.

Moreover, I would not be able to start my PhD studies without the help of Tolis Fasois who prepared me for the IELTS exam. His job was difficult, as there were only a few days before the exams; yet, he managed to improve my English in no time and I would like to thank him from this position.

The person who introduced me into the theory of Yang-Baxter maps -which covers a big part of this thesis- is Thodoris Kouloukas. We have had endless mathematical conversations and I would like to thank him for that, as well as for being a very good friend over these years. Many thanks are also due to my ex-neighbour and friend Georgi Grahovski for explaining to me what a Grassmann algebra is and for being very helpful during his postdoctoral stay in the University of Leeds. Moreover, I would like to thank my academic brother and friend, George Berkeley, for reading my thesis and making comments on it. It has been very nice working with both of them. It was also very beneficial to have several maths discussions with Pavlos Kassotakis, thus I would like to thank him for that.

Pavlos Xenitidis and Anastasia Kazaltzi have been my family here in Leeds. I met them in Patras when Pavlos was my academic tutor and they have been more than great friends ever since. I came to Leeds one year after they moved here when I decided to "follow" them. Living in Leeds without them would be completely different, as they made me feel as if I were home when I was away from it. I would like to thank them for everything from this position.

I was also very lucky, since Ilia Roustemoglou decided to join us one year after, and also Giorgos Papamikos a bit after her. They are both long-time friends of mine and it was a
pleasure to have them around. Therefore, I would like to thank them for the nice time we had in the UK. Additionally, I would like to thank Giorgos for proof-reading my thesis.

My postgraduate studies would never be the same without the support of my friends Eleni Christodoulidi, Spiros Dafnis, Stelios "Spawn" Dimas, Nikos Kallinikos, Chrysavgi Kostopoulou, Akis Matzaris, Mitsos Nomikos, Nikitas Nikandros, Grigoris Protsonis, Panagiotis Protsonis and Stavros Anastasiou. At this point, I should extend many thanks to Panagis Karazeris for being patient and friendly to all of us. Additionally, I would also like to thank Giota Adamopoulou and Maura Capuzzo who are the "new entries" in our friends list. I would like to thank all the former for having an amazing time throughout these years (and they are quite a few!) and for making the daily routine a pleasant journey. Moreover, I had a really nice time with my PhD-fellows and friends Laurence Hawke, Vijay Teeluck, Julia Sauter, Lamia Alqahtani, Neslihan Delice, Abeer Al-Nahdi, Huda Alshanabari, Bartosz Szczesny, Gareth Hurst and all the rest of the people in the satellite postgraduate office. And, of course, special thanks to Ms Charikleia for cooking for all of us. Finally, living in a shared flat would never be the same without the pleasant company of my flatmates and very good friends Sophia-Marie Honny, Priya Sinha and Moa Näsström.

Special thanks are due to my long-time friends Christos Fokas, Giorgos Panagiotidis in Athens and Costantinos Balamoshev and Ewa Golic in Warsaw, who I always think of no matter how far away they are.

Finally, I am more than grateful to my parents Anastasia and Giorgos for supporting everything I choose to do in my life. Moreover, special thanks to my uncle and aunt, Charilaos and Aleka, for their interest and support and to all the rest of the family but especially my twin brother Michael and my cousins and friends Costas, Stelios, Zoe and Marianna who I grew up with.

## Abstract

Darboux transformations constitute a very important tool in the theory of integrable systems. They map trivial solutions of integrable partial differential equations to nontrivial ones and they link the former to discrete integrable systems. On the other hand, they can be used to construct Yang-Baxter maps which can be restricted to completely integrable maps (in the Liouville sense) on invariant leaves.

In this thesis we study the Darboux transformations related to particular Lax operators of NLS type which are invariant under the action of the so-called reduction group. Specifically, we study the cases of: 1) the nonlinear Schrödinger equation (with no reduction), 2) the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation, where the corresponding Lax operator is invariant under the action of the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-reduction group and 3) a deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation, associated to a Lax operator invariant under the action of the dihedral reduction group. These reduction groups correspond to recent classification results of automorphic Lie algebras.

We derive Darboux matrices for all the above cases and we use them to construct novel discrete integrable systems together with their Lax representations. For these systems of difference equations, we discuss the initial value problem and, moreover, we consider their integrable reductions. Furthermore, the derivation of the Darboux matrices gives rise to many interesting objects, such as Bäcklund transformations for the corresponding partial differential equations as well as symmetries and conservation laws of their associated systems of difference equations.

Moreover, we employ these Darboux matrices to construct six-dimensional Yang-Baxter maps for all the afore-mentioned cases. These maps can be restricted to four-dimensional Yang-Baxter maps on invariant leaves, which are completely integrable; we also consider their vector generalisations.

Finally, we consider the Grassmann extensions of the Yang-Baxter maps corresponding to the nonlinear Schrödinger equation and the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation. These constitute the first examples of Yang-Baxter maps with noncommutative variables in the literature.

## Contents

Abstract ..... i
Contents ..... iii
List of abbreviations ..... viii
List of figures ..... xi
1 Introduction ..... 1
1.1 Lax representations and the IST ..... 2
1.1.1 Lax representations ..... 3
1.1.2 The inverse scattering transform ..... 5
1.1.3 The AKNS scheme ..... 6
1.2 Discrete integrable systems ..... 7
1.2.1 Equations on Quad-Graphs: 3D-consistency ..... 8
1.2.2 ABS classification of maps on quad-graphs ..... 10
1.2.3 Classification of quadrirational maps: The $F$-list ..... 11
1.3 Organisation of the thesis ..... 12
2 Bäcklund and Darboux transformations ..... 15
2.1 Overview ..... 15
2.2 Darboux transformations ..... 16
2.2.1 Darboux's theorem ..... 16
2.2.2 Darboux transformation for the KdV equation and Crum's theorem ..... 17
2.3 Bäcklund transformations ..... 19
2.3.1 BT for sine-Gordon equation and Bianchi's permutability ..... 21
2.3.2 Bäcklund transformation for the PKdV equation ..... 24
3 Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems ..... 27
3.1 Overview ..... 27
3.2 The reduction group and automorphic Lie algebras ..... 29
3.3 General framework ..... 30
3.3.1 Derivation of Darboux matrices ..... 30
3.3.2 Discrete Lax pairs and discrete systems ..... 34
3.4 NLS type equations ..... 38
3.4.1 The nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 38
3.4.2 The derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation: $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-reduction group ..... 41
3.4.3 A deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equa- tion: Dihedral reduction group ..... 45
3.5 Derivation of discrete systems and initial value prob- lems ..... 49
3.5.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation and related discrete systems ..... 49
3.5.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation and related discrete systems ..... 54
3.5.3 A deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equa- tion and related discrete systems ..... 57
4 Introduction to Yang-Baxter maps ..... 63
4.1 Overview ..... 63
4.2 The quantum Yang-Baxter equation ..... 64
4.2.1 Parametric Yang-Baxter maps ..... 64
4.2.2 Matrix refactorisation problems and the Lax equation ..... 66
4.3 Yang-Baxter maps and 3D consistent equations ..... 69
4.4 Classification of quadrirational YB maps: The $H$-list ..... 70
4.5 Transfer dynamics of YB maps and initial value pro- blems ..... 72
5 Yang-Baxter maps related to NLS type equations ..... 75
5.1 Overview ..... 75
5.2 Preliminaries ..... 76
5.2.1 Poisson manifolds and Casimir functions ..... 76
5.2.2 Properties of the YB maps which admit Lax representation ..... 77
5.2.3 Liouville integrability of Yang-Baxter maps ..... 79
5.3 Derivation of Yang-Baxter maps ..... 80
5.3.1 The Nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 81
5.3.2 Derivative NLS equation: $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction ..... 84
5.3.3 A deformation of the DNLS equation: Dihedral Group ..... 89
5.3.4 Dihedral group: A linearised YB map ..... 92
$5.42 \mathrm{~N} \times 2 \mathrm{~N}$-dimensional YB maps ..... 92
5.4.1 NLS equation ..... 93
5.4.2 $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction ..... 94
6 Extensions on Grassmann algebras ..... 95
6.1 Overview ..... 95
6.2 Elements of Grassmann algebras ..... 96
6.2.1 Supertrace and superdeterminant ..... 97
6.2.2 Differentiation rule for odd variables ..... 97
6.2.3 Properties of the Lax equation ..... 98
6.3 Extensions of Darboux transformations on Grass- mann algebras ..... 99
6.3.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 100
6.3.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 102
6.4 Grassmann extensions of Yang-Baxter maps ..... 105
6.4.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 105
6.4.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 108
6.4.3 Restriction on invariant leaves ..... 109
6.5 Vector generalisations: $4 N \times 4 N$ Yang-Baxter maps ..... 112
6.5.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 112
6.5.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation ..... 113
7 Conclusions ..... 115
7.1 Summary of results ..... 115
7.2 Future work ..... 116
Appendix ..... 119
A Solution of the system of discrete equations associated to the deformation of the DNLS equation ..... 119
CONTENTS ..... vii
Bibliography ..... 121
Index ..... 129

## List of abbreviations

ABS Adler, Bobenko and SurisAKNS Ablowitz, Kaup, Newell and Segur
BT Bäcklund transformation
DNLS Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger
dpKdV discrete potential Korteweg-de Vries
DT Darboux transformation
GGKM Gardner, Greene, Kruskal and Miura
IST Inverse scattering transform
KdV Korteweg de Vries
NLS Nonlinear Schrödinger
ODE Ordinary differential equation
PDE Partial differential equation
PKDV Potential Korteweg de Vries
SG ..... sine-Gordon
YB Yang-Baxter

## List of figures

1.1 IST scheme ..... 6
1.2 3D-consistency. ..... 9
2.1 Bianchi's permutability ..... 23
3.1 Bianchi commuting diagram ..... 34
3.2 Initial value problem and direction of evolution ..... 51
3.3 The stencil of six points and the initial value problem for equation (3.109) ..... 56
3.4 The stencil of seven points and the initial value problem on the black and white lattice ..... 61
4.1 Cubic representation of (a) the parametric YB map and (b) the corresponding YB equation. ..... 66
4.2 (a) dpKdV equation: fields placed on vertices (b) Adler's map: fields placed on the edges. ..... 70
4.3 Transfer maps corresponding to the $n$-periodic initial value problem ..... 73

## Chapter 1

## Introduction

The aim of this chapter is to give an introduction to the subject of integrable systems, which forms the context of this thesis. Integrable systems arise in nonlinear processes and, both in their classical and quantum version, have many applications in various fields of mathematics and physics.

However, the definition of integrable systems is itself highly nontrivial; many scientists have different opinions on what "integrable" should mean, which makes the definition of integrability elusive, rather than tangible. In fact, a comprehensive definition of integrability is not yet available. As working definitions we often use the existence of a Lax pair, the solvability of the system by the IST, the existence of infinitely many symmetries or conservation laws, or the existence of a sufficient number of first integrals which are in involution (Liouville integrability); there is even a book entirely devoted to what is integrability [94].

In this thesis we are interested in the derivation of discrete integrable systems and YangBaxter maps, from (integrable) PDEs which admit Lax representation, via Darboux transformations. Specifically, we shall be focusing on particular PDEs of NLS type whose corresponding Lax operators possess certain symmetries, due to the action of the so-called reduction group.

Since these AKNS-type Lax operators we are dealing with constitute a key role in the integrability of their associated equations under the IST, the inverse scattering method and
the AKNS scheme deserve a few pages in the first part of this introduction. However, we will skip the technical parts of their methods, as it is not the aim of this thesis. For detailed information on the methods and the historical review of the results, we indicatively refer to $[4,1,31]$ (and the references therein).

The second part of this chapter is devoted to a brief introduction to the integrability of discrete systems; in the main, their multidimensional consistency and some recent classification results.

### 1.1 Lax representations and the IST

The inverse scattering transformation (or just transform) is a method for solving nonlinear PDEs. Its name is due to the main idea of the method, namely the recovery of the time evolution of the potential solution of the nonlinear equation, from the time evolution of its scattering data. As a matter of fact, the method of the inverse scattering transform is of the same philosophy as the Fourier transform technique for solving linear PDEs; actually, the IST is also found in the literature as the nonlinear Fourier transform. However, it does not apply to all nonlinear equations in a systematic way.

The first example of nonlinear PDE solvable by the IST method, is the KdV equation, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=6 u u_{x}-u_{x x x}, \quad u=u(x, t), \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is undoubtedly the most celebrated nonlinear PDE over the last few decades. It mostly owes its popularity to Gardner, Greene, Kruskal and Miura, who were the first to derive the exact solution of the Cauchy problem for the KdV equation, for rapidly decaying initial values, in late sixties [36]. However, equation (1.1) was derived by Diederik Korteweg and Gustav de Vries in 1895, as a mathematical model of water-waves in shallow channels. In fact, they showed that the KdV equation represents Scott Russel's solitary wave, known as soliton (see [31] for details). The name "soliton" was given by Zabusky and Kruskal ${ }^{1}$ in 1965, when they discovered numerically that these wave

[^0]solutions behave like particles; they retain their amplitude and speed after collision.

The work of GGKM in 1967, namely the IST method, is probably one of the most significant results of the last century in the theory of nonlinear PDEs. It is not only a technique for solving the initial value problem for KdV , but it also initiated a more general scheme applicable to other nonlinear PDEs. In fact, P. Lax was the one who contributed in this direction, formulating a more general framework a year later in [55].

### 1.1.1 Lax representations

Lax's generalisation concerns nonlinear evolution equations, namely equations of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=N(u), \quad u=u(x, t), \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $N$ is a nonlinear differential operator, which does not depend on $\partial_{t}$.
In particular, Lax considered a pair of linear differential operators, $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{A}$. Operator $\mathcal{L}$ is associated to the following spectral problem of finding eigenvalues and eigenfunctions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L} \psi=\lambda \psi, \quad \psi=\psi(x, t) \tag{1.3a}
\end{equation*}
$$

while $\mathcal{A}$ is the operator related to the time evolution of the eigenfunctions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\psi_{t}=\mathcal{A} \psi \tag{1.3b}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 1.1.1 (Lax's equation) If the spectral parameter does not evolve in time, namely $\lambda_{t}=0$, then relations (1.3) imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{t}+[\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{A}]=0, \tag{1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $[\mathcal{L}, \mathcal{A}]:=\mathcal{L} \mathcal{A}-\mathcal{A} \mathcal{L}$.

## Proof

Differentiation of (1.3a) with respect to $t$ implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}_{t} \psi+\mathcal{L} \psi_{t}=\lambda \psi_{t} . \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using both relations (1.3), the above equation can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\mathcal{L}_{t}+\mathcal{L} \mathcal{A}-\mathcal{A} \mathcal{L}\right) \psi=0 \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, since the above holds for the arbitrary eigenfunction $\psi(x, t)$, it implies equation (1.4).

If a nonlinear evolution equation (or a system of equations) of the form (1.2) is equivalent to (1.4), then we can associate to it a pair of linear operators as (1.3). In this case, equation (1.4) is called the Lax equation, while equations (1.3) constitute a Lax representation or, simply, a Lax pair for (1.2). In particular, equation (1.3a) is called the spatial part of the Lax pair (or $x$-part), while equation (1.3b) is called its temporal part (or $t$-part).

The property of a nonlinear evolution equation to be written as a compatibility condition of a pair of linear equations (1.4) plays a key role towards the solvability of the equation under the IST, and it is usually used as an integrability criterion.

Remark 1.1.2 For a given nonlinear evolution equation (1.2) there is no systematic method of writing it as a compatibility condition of a pair of linear equations, namely to determine operators $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{A}$. In fact, the usual procedure is to first study differential operators of certain form, and then to examine what kind of PDEs result from their compatibility condition.

Example 1.1.3 The KdV equation (1.1) can be written as a compatibility condition of the form (1.4), of a system of linear equations (1.3), where $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{A}$ are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathcal{L}=-\partial_{x}^{2}+u, \quad u=u(x, t),  \tag{1.7a}\\
& \mathcal{A}=-4 \partial_{x}^{3}+3 u \partial_{x}+3 u_{x} \tag{1.7b}
\end{align*}
$$

Operators $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{A}$ constitute a Lax pair for the KdV equation.

Operator (1.7a) is the so-called Schrödinger operator and the corresponding equation $\mathcal{L} \psi=\lambda \psi$ is the time-independent Schrödinger equation, which constitutes a fundamental equation in mathematical physics since the first quarter of the $20^{\text {th }}$ century. However,
the Lax pair (1.7) for the KdV equation was not derived from the equation itself. As a matter of fact, the "guess" of the operator (1.7a) was inspired by the desire to link the KdV equation with Schrödinger's equation.

We will come back to this Schrödinger equation in the next chapter, where we shall study its covariance under the so-called Darboux transformation.

### 1.1.2 The inverse scattering transform

Although so far the method of the inverse scattering transform is not yet formulated to be uniformly applicable to all nonlinear evolution equations, it always consists of three basic steps. We briefly explain these steps, and we also present them schematically in Figure 1.1.

Consider the following Cauchy problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{t}=N(u), \quad u(x, 0)=f(x), \quad u:=u(x, t), \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

for a nonlinear evolution equation. Let us also assume that the above PDE admits Lax representation (1.3).

## Step I: The direct problem

The direct problem consists of finding the scattering transformation at a fixed value of the temporal parameter, say $t=0$, by using the initial condition $u(x, 0)=f(x)$. That is to find the spectral data of operator $\mathcal{L}$, which are called the scattering data. The scattering transform at $t=0$ is nothing but a set of scattering data, which we denote $\left.S(u)\right|_{t=0}$.

## Step $I I$ : Time evolution of the scattering data

This is the part where one needs to determine the scattering data at an arbitrary time $t \in \mathbb{R}$, i.e. given $\left.S(u)\right|_{t=0}$, use the second equation of (1.3) to determine $\left.S(u)\right|_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$. The significance of this part lies in the fact that we are now dealing with a linear problem, (1.3b), rather than a nonlinear one as the original.

## Step III: The inverse problem

Analogously to the Fourier transform method, the final step is to recover $u=u(x, t)$ from $\left.S(u)\right|_{t \in \mathbb{R}}$.


Figure 1.1: IST scheme

### 1.1.3 The AKNS scheme

In 1971 Zakharov and Shabat [93] applied the inverse scattering transform method to solve the NLS equation, introducing a more general formulation than Lax's. Specifically, they introduced a pair of linear equations, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} \psi & =\mathcal{L} \psi, \quad \psi:=\psi(x, t),  \tag{1.9a}\\
\partial_{t} \psi & =\mathcal{T} \psi, \tag{1.9b}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\mathcal{L}=\mathcal{L}(x, t ; \lambda)$ and $\mathcal{T}=\mathcal{T}(x, t ; \lambda)$ are $2 \times 2$ matrices. They showed that the NLS equation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}=p_{x x}+4 p^{2} q, \quad q_{t}=-q_{x x}-4 p q^{2}, \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

can be written as a compatibility condition, $\psi_{x t}=\psi_{t x}$, of the system of linear equations (1.9), where $\mathcal{L}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=D_{x}+U, \quad \mathcal{T}=D_{t}+V, \tag{1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $U$ and $V$ by

$$
\begin{align*}
& U=\lambda \sigma_{3}+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad \sigma_{3}:=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1),  \tag{1.12a}\\
& V=\lambda^{2} \sigma_{3}+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
-2 p q & p_{x} \\
-q_{x} & 2 p q
\end{array}\right) . \tag{1.12b}
\end{align*}
$$

A year later, Ablowitz, Kaup, Newell and Segur in [2], motivated by Zakharov and Shabat's result, solved the sine-Gordon equation and they generalised this method to cover a wider number of nonlinear PDEs (see [3]). In the rest of this thesis, we shall refer to operators of the form (1.11) as Lax operators of AKNS-type.

### 1.2 Discrete integrable systems

Discrete systems, namely systems with their independent variables taking discrete values, are of particular interest and have many applications in several sciences as physics, biology, financial mathematics, as well as several other branches of mathematics, since they are essential in numerical analysis. Initially, they were appearing as discretisations of continuous equations, but now discrete integrable systems, and in particular those defined on a two-dimensional lattice, are appreciated in their own right from a theoretical perspective.

The study of discrete systems and their integrability earned its interest in late seventies; Hirota studied particular discrete systems in 1977, in a series of papers [43, 44, 45, 46] where he derived discrete analogues of many already famous PDEs. In the early eighties, semi-discrete and discrete systems started appearing in field-theoretical models in the work of Jimbo and Miwa; they also provided a method of generating discrete soliton equations [24, 25, 26, 27, 28]. Shortly after, Ablowitz and Taha in a series of papers [84, $85,86]$ are using numerical methods in order to find solutions for known integrable PDEs, using as basis of their method some partial difference equations, which are integrable in their own right. Moreover, Capel, Nijhoff, Quispel and collaborators provided some of the first systematic tools for studying discrete integrable systems and, in particular, for the
direct construction of integrable lattice equations (we indicatively refer to [70, 79]); that was a starting point for new systems of discrete equations to appear in the literature.

In 1991 Grammaticos, Papageorgiou and Ramani proposed the first discrete integrability test, known as singularity confinement [39], which is similar to that of the Painlevé property for continuous integrability. However, as mentioned in [40], it is not sufficient criterion for predicting integrability, as it does not furnish any information about the rate of growth of the solutions of the discrete integrable system.

As in the continuous case, the usual integrability criterion being used for discrete systems is the existence of a Lax pair. Nevertheless, a very important integrability criterion is that of the 3D-consistency and, by extension, the multidimensional consistency. This was proposed independently by Nijhoff in 2001 [72] and Bobenko and Suris in 2002 [15].

In what follows, we briefly explain what is the 3D-consistency property and we review some recent classification results. For more information on the integrability of discrete systems we refer to [69] which is one of the few self-contained monographs, as well as [40] for a collection of results.

### 1.2.1 Equations on Quad-Graphs: 3D-consistency

Let us consider a discrete equation of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q\left(u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11} ; a, b\right)=0 \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $u_{i j}, i, j=0,1, u \equiv u_{00}$, belong in a set $\mathcal{A}$ and the parameters $a, b \in \mathbb{C}$. Moreover, we assume that (1.13) is uniquely solvable for any $u_{i}$ in terms of the rest. We can interpret the fields $u_{i}$ to be attached to the vertices of a square as in Figure 1.2-(a).

If equation (1.13) can be generalised in a consistent way on the faces of a cube, then it is said to be $3 D$-consistent. In particular, suppose we have the initial values $u, u_{100}, u_{010}$ and $u_{001}$ attached to the vertices of the cube as in Figure 1.2-(b). Now, since equation (1.13) is uniquely solvable, we can uniquely determine values $u_{110}, u_{101}$ and $u_{011}$, using the bottom, front and left face of the cube. Then, there are three ways to determine value $u_{111}$, and we have the following.

Definition 1.2.1 If for any choice of initial values $u, u_{100}, u_{010}$ and $u_{001}$, equation $Q=0$ produces the same value $u_{111}$ when solved using the left, back or top face of the cube, then it is called 3D-consistent.

(a) Quad-Graph

(b) Cube

Figure 1.2: 3D-consistency.

Note 1.2.2 In the above interpretation, we have adopted the following notation: We consider the square in Figure 1.2-(a) to be an elementary square in a two dimensional lattice. Then, we assume that field $u$ depends on two discrete variables $n$ and $m$, i.e. $u=u(n, m)$. Therefore, $u_{i j} \mathrm{~s}$ on the vertices of 1.2-(a) are

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{00}=u(n, m), \quad u_{10}=u(n+1, m), \quad u_{01}=u(n, m+1), \quad u_{11}=u(n+1, m+1) . \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, for the interpretation on the cube we assume that $u$ depends on a third variable $k$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{000}=u(n, m, k), \quad u_{100}=u(n+1, m, k), \ldots \quad u_{111}=u(n+1, m+1, k+1) \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, as an illustrative example we use the discrete potential KdV equation which first appeared in [43].

Example 1.2.3 (Discrete potential KdV equation) Consider equation (1.13), where $Q$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q\left(u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11} ; a, b\right)=\left(u-u_{11}\right)\left(u_{10}-u_{01}\right)+b-a . \tag{1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, using the bottom, front and left faces of the cube 1.2-(b), we can solve equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& Q\left(u, u_{100}, u_{010}, u_{110} ; a, b\right)=0  \tag{1.17a}\\
& Q\left(u, u_{100}, u_{001}, u_{101} ; a, c\right)=0  \tag{1.17b}\\
& Q\left(u, u_{010}, u_{001}, u_{011} ; b, c\right)=0 \tag{1.17c}
\end{align*}
$$

to obtain solutions for $u_{110}, u_{101}$ and $u_{011}$, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
& u_{110}=u+\frac{a-b}{u_{010}-u_{100}},  \tag{1.18a}\\
& u_{101}=u+\frac{a-c}{u_{001}-u_{100}},  \tag{1.18b}\\
& u_{011}=u+\frac{b-c}{u_{001}-u_{010}}, \tag{1.18c}
\end{align*}
$$

respectively.
Now, if we shift (1.18a) in the $k$-direction, and then substitute $u_{101}$ and $u_{011}$ (which appear in the resulting expression for $u_{11}$ ) by (1.18), we deduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{111}=-\frac{(a-b) u_{100} u_{010}+(b-c) u_{010} u_{001}+(c-a) u_{100} u_{001}}{(a-b) u_{001}+(b-c) u_{100}+(c-a) u_{010}} . \tag{1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

It is obvious that, because of the symmetry in the above expression, we would obtain exactly the same expression for $u_{111}$ if we had alternatively shifted $u_{101}$ in the $m$-direction and substituted $u_{110}$ and $u_{011}$ by (1.18), or if we had shifted $u_{011}$ in the $n$-direction and substituted $u_{110}$ and $u_{101}$. Thus, the dpKdV equation is 3D-consistent.

### 1.2.2 ABS classification of maps on quad-graphs

In 2003 [8] Adler, Bobenko and Suris classified all the 3D-consistent equations in the case where $\mathcal{A}=\mathbb{C}$. In particular, they considered all the equations of the form (1.13), where $u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11}, a, b \in \mathbb{C}$, that satisfy the following properties:
(I) Multilinearity. Function $Q=Q\left(u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11} ; a, b\right)$ is a first order polynomial in each of its arguments, namely linear in each of the fields $u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11}$. That is,

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q\left(u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11} ; a, b\right)=a_{1} u u_{10} u_{01} u_{11}+a_{2} u u_{10} u_{01}+a_{3} u u_{10} u_{11}+\ldots+a_{16} \tag{1.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{i}=a_{i}(a, b), i=1, \ldots, 16$.
(II) Symmetry. Function $Q$ satisfies the following symmetry property

$$
\begin{equation*}
Q\left(u, u_{10}, u_{01}, u_{11} ; a, b\right)=\epsilon Q\left(u, u_{01}, u_{10}, u_{11} ; b, a\right)=\sigma Q\left(u_{10}, u, u_{11}, u_{01} ; a, b\right), \tag{1.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $\epsilon, \sigma= \pm 1$.
(III) Tetrahedron property. That is, the final value $u_{111}$ is independent of $u$.

ABS proved that all the equations of the form (1.13) which satisfy the above conditions, can be reduced to seven basic equations, using Möbius (fraction linear) transformations of the independent variables and point transformations of the parameters. These seven equations are distributed into two lists known as the $Q$-list (list of 4 equations) and the $H$-list (list of 3 equations).

Remark 1.2.4 The dpKdV equation in Example 4.24 is the fisrt member of the $H$-list ( $H 1$ equation).

## Lax representations

Those equations of the form (1.13) which satisfy the multilinearity condition (I), admit Lax representation. In fact, in this case, introducing an auxiliary spectral parameter, $\lambda$, there is an algorithmic way to find a matrix $L$ such that equation (1.13) can be written as the following zero-curvature equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
L\left(u_{11}, u_{01} ; a, \lambda\right) L\left(u_{01}, u ; b, \lambda\right)=L\left(u_{11}, u_{10} ; b, \lambda\right) L\left(u_{10}, u ; a, \lambda\right) . \tag{1.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

We shall see later on that 1) equations of the form (1.13) with the fields on the edges of the square 1.2-(a) are related to Yang-Baxter maps and 2) Yang-Baxter maps may have Lax representation as (1.22).

### 1.2.3 Classification of quadrirational maps: The $F$-list

A year after the classification of the 3D-consistent equations, ABS in [9] classified all the quadrirational maps in the case where $\mathcal{A}=\mathbb{C P}^{1}$; the associated list of maps is known as
the $F$-list. Recall that, a map $Y:(x, y) \mapsto(u(x, y), v(x, y))$ is called quadrirational, if the maps

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(., y): \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{A}, \quad v(x, .): \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathcal{A} \tag{1.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

are birational. In particular, we have the following.

Theorem 1.2.5 (ABS, F-list) Up to Möbius transformations, any quadrirational map on $\mathbb{C P}^{1} \times \mathbb{C P}^{1}$ is equivalent to one of the following maps

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
u & =a y P, & v & =b x P, \\
& =\frac{P}{a} P=\frac{(1-b) x+b-a+(a-1) y}{b(1-a) x+(a-b) x y+a(b-1) y} ; \\
u & =\frac{y}{a} P, & v & =\frac{x}{b} P, \\
& =\frac{x}{b} P, & P & =\frac{a x-b y+b-a}{x-y} ; \\
u & =y P & v & =x P,  \tag{V}\\
u & =x-y \\
u & =y+P, & v & =x+P,
\end{array}
$$

up to suitable choice of the parameters $a$ and $b$.

We shall come back to the $F$-list in chapter 4, where we shall see that all the equations of the $F$-list have the Yang-Baxter property; yet, the other members of their equivalence classes may not satisfy the Yang-Baxter equation. However, we shall present a more precise list given in [75].

Finally, we devote the last part of this introduction to present the plan of this thesis.

### 1.3 Organisation of the thesis

The results of the thesis are distributed to chapters 3,5 and 6 and appear in the articles [50], [49] and [37], respectively. The character of chapter 2 is introductory, while chapter 4 is a review to recent developments in the area of Yang-Baxter maps. Specifically, this thesis is organised as follows.

Chapter 2 deals with Bäcklund and Darboux transformations. In particular, starting with the original theorem of Darboux, that was presented in 1882 ([23]), we explain that a

Darboux transformation is nothing else but a transformation which leaves covariant a Sturm-Liouville problem. We show that this fact can be used to construct hierarchies of solutions of particular nonlinear equations and we present the very well-known Darboux transformation for the KdV equation. Moreover, we explain what are Bäcklund transformations, namely transformations which relate either solutions of a particular PDE (auto-BT), or solutions of different PDEs (hetero-BT). We show how, using BTs, one can construct solutions of a nonlinear PDE in an algebraic manner, and we present the well-known examples of the BTs for the sine-Gordon equation and the KdV equation.

In chapter 3 we derive Darboux transformations for particular NLS type equations, namely the NLS equation, the DNLS equation and a deformation of the DNLS equation. The spatial parts of the Lax pair of these equations are represented by (Lax) operators which possess certain symmetries; in particular, these symmetries are due to the action of the reduction group. In all the afore-mentioned cases, we derive DTs which are understood as gauge-like transformations which depend rationally on a spectral parameter and inherit the symmetries of their corresponding Lax operator. These DTs are employed in the construction of novel discrete integrable systems which have first integrals and, in some cases, can be reduced to Toda type equations. Moreover, the derivation of the DT implies other significant objects, such as Bäcklund transformations for the corresponding PDEs, as well as symmetries and conservation laws for the associated discrete systems. All these cases of NLS type equations studied in this chapter correspond to recent classification results.

Chapter 4 has introductory character and it is devoted to Yang-Baxter maps. In particular, we explain what Yang-Baxter maps are and what is their connection with matrix refactorisation problems. Moreover, we show the relation between the YB equation and 3D consistency equations, plus we review some of the recent developments, such as the associated transfer dynamics and some recent classification results.

In chapter 5 we employ the Darboux transformations -derived in chapter 3- in the construction of Yang-Baxter maps, and we study their integrability as finite discrete maps. Particularly, we construct six-dimensional YB maps which can be restricted to four-dimensional YB maps which are completely integrable in the Liouville sense. These
integrable restrictions are motivated by the existence of certain first integrals. In the case of NLS equation, the four-dimensional restriction is the Adler-Yamilov map.

Chapter 6 is devoted to the noncommutative extensions of both Darboux transformations and Yang-Baxter maps in the cases of NLS and DNLS equations. Specifically, we show that there are explicit Yang-Baxter maps with Darboux-Lax representation between Grassman algebraic varieties. We deduce novel endomorphisms of Grassmann varieties and, in particular, we present ten-dimensional maps which can be restricted to eightdimensional Yang-Baxter maps on invariant leaves, related to the Grassmann-extended NLS and DNLS equations. We discuss their Liouville integrability and we consider their vector generalisations.

Finally, in chapter 7 we provide the reader with a summary of the results of the thesis, as well as with some ideas for future work.

## Chapter 2

## Bäcklund and Darboux transformations

### 2.1 Overview

Bäcklund and Darboux (or Darboux type) transformations originate from differential geometry of surfaces in the nineteenth century, and they constitute an important and very well studied connection with the modern soliton theory and the theory of integrable systems.

In the modern theory of integrable systems, these transformations are used to generate solutions of partial differential equations, starting from known solutions, even trivial ones. In fact, Darboux transformations apply to systems of linear equations, while Bäcklund transformations are generally related to systems of nonlinear equations.

This chapter is organised as follows: The next section deals with Darboux transformations and, in particular, the original theorem of Darboux and its application to the KdV equation, as well as its generalisation, namely Crum's theorem. Then, section 3 is devoted to Bäcklund transformations and how they can be used to construct solutions in a algebraic way starting with known ones, using Bianchi's permutability; in particular, we present the examples of the Bäcklund transformation for the sine-Gordon equation and the KdV equation.

For further information on Bäcklund and Darboux transformations we indicatively refer to [41, 62, 80] (and the references therein).

### 2.2 Darboux transformations

In 1882 Jean Gaston Darboux [23] presented the so-called "Darboux theorem" which states that a Sturm-Liouville problem is covariant with respect to a linear transformation. In the recent literature, this is called the Darboux transformation [62, 80]. The first book devoted to the relation between Darboux transformations and the soliton theory is that of Matveev and Salle [62].

### 2.2.1 Darboux's theorem

Darboux's original result is related to the so-called one-dimensional, time-independent Schrödinger equation, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}+(\lambda-u) y=0, \quad u=u(x) \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be found in the literature as a Sturm-Liouville problem of finding eigenvalues and eigenfunctions. Moreover, we refer to $u$ as a potential function, or just potential.

In particular we have the following.

Theorem 2.2.1 (Darboux) Let $y_{1}=y_{1}(x)$ be a particular integral of the Sturm-Liouville problem (2.1), for the value of the spectral parameter $\lambda=\lambda_{1}$. Consider also the following (Darboux) transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
y \mapsto y[1]:=\left(\frac{d}{d x}-l_{1}\right) y, \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

of an arbitrary solution, $y$, of (2.1), where $l_{1}=l_{1}\left(y_{1}\right)=y_{1, x} y_{1}^{-1}$ is the logarithmic derivative of $y_{1}$. Then, $y[1]$ obeys the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
y^{\prime \prime}[1]+(\lambda-u[1]) y[1]=0, \tag{2.3a}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $u[1]$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u[1]=u-2 l_{1}^{\prime} . \tag{2.3b}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

Substitution of $y[1]$ in (2.2) into (2.3) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(u-2 l_{1}^{\prime}-u[1]\right) y^{\prime}+\left(u^{\prime}-l_{1} u-l_{1}^{\prime \prime}+l_{1} u[1]\right) y=0, \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used (2.1) to express $y^{\prime \prime}[1]$ and $y^{\prime \prime \prime}[1]$ in terms of $y$ and $y^{\prime}$. Now, since $y$ in (2.4) is arbitrary, it follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
u[1]=u-2 l_{1}^{\prime}, \quad u^{\prime}-l_{1} u-l_{1}^{\prime \prime}+l_{1} u[1]=0 . \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, substitution of the first equation of (2.5) to the second implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
u-l_{1}^{2}-l_{1}^{\prime}=\lambda_{1}=\text { const. } \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

after one integration with respect to $x$. Equation (2.6) is identically satisfied due to the definition of the logarithmic function, $l_{1}$, and the fact that $y_{1}$ obeys (2.1).

Darboux's theorem states that function $y[1]$ given in (2.2) obeys a Sturm-Liouville problem of the same structure with (2.1), namely the same equation (2.1) but with an updated potential $u[1]$. In other words, equation (2.1) is covariant with respect to the Darboux transformation, $y \mapsto y[1], u \mapsto u[1]$.

### 2.2.2 Darboux transformation for the KdV equation and Crum's theorem

The significance of the Darboux theorem lies in the fact that transformation (2.2) maps solutions of a Sturm-Liouville equation (2.1) to other solutions of the same equation, which allows us to construct hierarchies of such solutions. At the same time, the theorem provides us with a relation between the "old" and the "new" potential. In fact, if the potential $u$ obeys a nonlinear ODE (or more importantly a nonlinear $\mathrm{PDE}^{1}$ ), then relation (2.3) may allow us to construct new non-trivial solutions starting from trivial ones, such as the zero solution.

[^1]Example 2.2.2 Consider the Sturm-Liouville equation (2.1) in the case where the potential, $u$, satisfies the KdV equation. Therefore, both the eigenfunction $y$ and the potential $u$ depend on $t$, which slips into their expressions as a parameter.

In this case, equation (2.1) is nothing else but the spatial part of the Lax pair for the KdV equation that we have seen in the previous chapter; recall:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L} y=\lambda y \quad \text { or } \quad y_{x x}+(\lambda-u(x, t)) y=0 \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, according to theorem 2.2.1, for a known solution of the $\operatorname{KdV}$ equation, say $u$, we can solve (2.1) to obtain $y=y(x, t ; \lambda)$. Evaluating at $\lambda=\lambda_{1}$, we get $y_{1}(x, t)=y\left(x, t ; \lambda_{1}\right)$ and thus, using equation (2.3b), a new potential $u[1]$. Therefore, we simultaneously obtain new solutions, $(y[1], u[1])$, for both the linear equation (2.7) and the KdV equation ${ }^{2}$, which are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& y[1]=\left(\partial_{x}-l_{1}\right) y,  \tag{2.8a}\\
& u[1]=u-2 l_{1, x}, \tag{2.8b}
\end{align*}
$$

respectively.
Now, applying the Darboux transformation once more, we can construct a second solution of the KdV equation in a fully algebraic manner. Specifically, first we consider the solution $y_{2}[1]$, which is $y[1]$ evaluated at $\lambda=\lambda_{2}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{2}[1]=\left(\partial_{x}-l_{1}\right) y_{2} . \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y_{2}=y\left(x, t ; \lambda_{2}\right)$ Then, we obtain a second pair of solutions, $(y[2], u[2])$, for (2.7) and the KdV equation, given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& y[2]=\left(\partial_{x}-l_{2}\right) y[1] \stackrel{(2.8 a)}{=}\left(\partial_{x}-l_{2}\right)\left(\partial_{x}-l_{1}\right) y,  \tag{2.10a}\\
& u[2]=u[1]-2 l_{2, x} \stackrel{(2.8 b)}{=} u-2\left(l_{1, x}+l_{2, x}\right) . \tag{2.10b}
\end{align*}
$$

This procedure can be repeated successively, in order to construct hierarchies of solutions for the KdV equation, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
(y[1], u[1]) \rightarrow(y[2], u[2]) \rightarrow \cdots \rightarrow(y[n], u[n]) \rightarrow \cdots \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^2]where $(y[n], u[n])$ are given by
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
y[n]=\left(\prod_{k=1}^{\hat{n}}\left(\partial_{x}-l_{k}\right)\right) y, \quad u[n]=u-2 \sum_{k=1}^{n}\left(l_{k, x}\right) \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

where " $\curvearrowleft$ " indicates that the terms of the above "product" are arranged from the right to the left.

We must note that Crum in 1955 [22] derived more practical and elegant expressions for $y[n]$ and $u[n]$, in (2.12), which are formulated in the following generalisation of the Darboux theorem 2.2.1.

Theorem 2.2.3 (Crum) Let $y_{1}, y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}$ be particular integrals of the Sturm-Liouville equation (2.1), corresponding to the eigenvalues $\lambda_{1}, \lambda_{2}, \ldots, \lambda_{n}$. Then, the following function

$$
\begin{equation*}
y[n]=\frac{W\left[y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}, y\right]}{W\left[y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right]} \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $W\left[y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right]$ denotes the Wronskian determinant of functions $y_{1}, y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}$, obeys the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{x, x}[n]+(\lambda-u[n]) y[n]=0, \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the potential $u[n]$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u[n]=u-2 \frac{d^{2}}{d x^{2}} \ln \left(W\left[y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right]\right) \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 2.2.4 For $n=1$, Crum's theorem 2.2.3 coincides with Darboux's theorem 2.2.1.

In this thesis, we understand Darboux transformations as gauge-like transformations which depend on a spectral parameter. In fact, as we shall see in the next chapter, their dependence on the spectral parameter is essential to construct discrete integrable systems.

### 2.3 Bäcklund transformations

As mentioned earlier, Bäcklund transformations originate in differential geometry in the 1880s and, in particular, they arose as certain transformations between surfaces.

In the theory of integrable systems, they are seen as relations between solutions of the same PDE (auto-BT) or as relations between solutions of two different PDEs (hetero-BT). Regarding the nonlinear equations which have Lax representation, Darboux transformations apply to the associated linear problem (Lax pair), while Bäcklund transformations are related to the nonlinear equation itself. Therefore, unlike DTs, BTs do not depend on the spectral parameter which appears in the definition of the Lax pair. Yet, both DTs and BTs serve the same purpose; they are used to construct non-trivial solutions starting from trivial ones.

Definition 2.3.1 (BT-loose Def.) Consider the following partial differential equations for $u$ and $v$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
F\left(u, u_{x}, u_{t}, u_{x x}, u_{x t}, \ldots\right) & =0  \tag{2.16a}\\
G\left(v, v_{x}, v_{t}, v_{x x}, v_{x t}, \ldots\right) & =0 . \tag{2.16b}
\end{align*}
$$

## Consider also the following pair of relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{B}_{i}\left(u, u_{x}, u_{t}, \ldots, v, v_{x}, v_{t}, \ldots\right)=0 \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

between $u, v$ and their derivatives. If $\mathcal{B}_{i}=0$ is integrable for $v, \bmod \langle F=0\rangle$, and the resulting $v$ is a solution of $G=0$, and vice versa, then it is an hetero-Bäcklund transformation. Moreover, if $F \equiv G$, the relations $\mathcal{B}_{i}=0$ is an auto-Bäcklund transformation.

The simplest example of BT are the well-known Cauchy-Riemann relations in complex analysis, for the analyticity of a complex function, $f=u(x, t)+v(x, t) i$.

Example 2.3.2 (Laplace equation) Functions $u=u(x, t)$ and $v=v(x, t)$ are harmonic, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla^{2} u=0, \quad \nabla^{2} v=0 \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

if the following Cauchy-Riemann relations hold

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{x}=v_{t}, \quad u_{t}=-v_{x} . \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

The latter equations constitute an auto-BT for the Laplace equation (2.18) and can be used to construct solutions of the same equations, starting with known ones. For instance, consider the simple solution $v(x, t)=x t$. Then, according to (2.19), a second solution of (2.18), $u$, has to satisfy $u_{x}=x$ and $u_{t}=-t$. Therefore, $u$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
u=\frac{1}{2}\left(x^{2}-t^{2}\right) . \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, even though Laplace's equation is linear, the same idea works for nonlinear equations.

### 2.3.1 BT for sine-Gordon equation and Bianchi's permutability

One of the first examples of BT was for the nonlinear sine-Gordon equation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
u_{x t}=\sin u, \quad u=u(x, t) . \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us now consider the following well-known relations

$$
\mathcal{B}_{\alpha}:\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left(\frac{u+v}{2}\right)_{x}=\alpha \sin \left(\frac{u-v}{2}\right),  \tag{2.22}\\
\left(\frac{u-v}{2}\right)_{t}=\frac{1}{\alpha} \sin \left(\frac{u+v}{2}\right),
\end{array}\right.
$$

between functions $u=u(x, t)$ and $v=v(x, t)$.
We have the following.

Proposition 2.3.3 Relations (2.22) constitute an auto-BT between the solutions $u=$ $u(x, t)$ and $v=v(x, t)$ of the $S G$ equation (2.21).

## Proof

Differentiating the first equation of (2.22) with respect to $t$ and the second with respect to $x$, we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{u+v}{2}\right)_{x t}=\cos \left(\frac{u-v}{2}\right) \sin \left(\frac{u+v}{2}\right),  \tag{2.23a}\\
& \left(\frac{u-v}{2}\right)_{t x}=\cos \left(\frac{u+v}{2}\right) \sin \left(\frac{u-v}{2}\right), \tag{2.23b}
\end{align*}
$$

where he have made use of (2.22). Now, we demand that the above equations are compatible, namely $u_{x t}=u_{t x}$ and $v_{x t}=v_{t x}$. Adding equations (2.23) by parts, we deduce that $u$ obeys the SG equation. Moreover, the same is true for $v$ after subtraction of (2.23) by parts. Hence, (2.22) is an auto-Bäcklund transformation for the SG equation.

Remark 2.3.4 We shall refer to the first equation of (2.22) as the spatial part (or $x$-part) of the BT, while we refer to the second one as the temporal part (or t-part) of the BT.

## Bianchi's permutability: Nonlinear superposition principle of solutions of the SG equation

Starting with a function $u=u(x, t)$, such that $u_{x t}=\sin u$, one can construct a second solution of the SG equation, $u_{1}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{1}}(u)$, using the spatial part of the BT (2.22), namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{u_{1}+u}{2}\right)_{x}=\alpha_{1} \sin \left(\frac{u_{1}-u}{2}\right) . \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, using another parameter, $\alpha_{2}$, we can construct a second solution $u_{2}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{2}}(u)$, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\frac{u_{2}+u}{2}\right)_{x}=\alpha_{2} \sin \left(\frac{u_{2}-u}{2}\right) . \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, starting with the solutions $u_{1}$ and $u_{2}$, we can construct two new solutions $u_{12}$ and $u_{21}$ from relations $u_{12}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{2}}\left(u_{1}\right)$ and $u_{21}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{1}}\left(u_{2}\right)$, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(\frac{u_{12}+u_{1}}{2}\right)_{x}=\alpha_{2} \sin \left(\frac{u_{12}-u_{1}}{2}\right)  \tag{2.26}\\
& \left(\frac{u_{21}+u_{2}}{2}\right)_{x}=\alpha_{1} \sin \left(\frac{u_{21}-u_{2}}{2}\right) \tag{2.27}
\end{align*}
$$

as represented schematically in Figure 2.1-(a).
Nevertheless, the above relations need integration in order to derive the actual solutions $u_{1}, u_{2}$ and, in retrospect, solutions $u_{12}$ and $u_{21}$. Yet, having at our disposal solutions $u_{1}$ and $u_{2}$, a new solution can be constructed using Bianchi's permutativity (see Figure 2.1-(b)) in a purely algebraic way. Specifically, we have the following.

(a) Construction of solutions using BT

(b) Bianchi's diagram

Figure 2.1: Bianchi's permutability

Proposition 2.3.5 Imposing the condition $u_{12}=u_{21}$, the BTs $\{(2.24)-(2.27)\}$ imply the following solution of the $S G$ equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
U=u+4 \arctan \left[\frac{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}}{\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{1}} \tan \left(\frac{u_{1}-u_{2}}{4}\right)\right] . \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

First, we subtract (2.25) and (2.27) from (2.24) and (2.26), respectively, and then subtract by parts the resulting equations to obtain

$$
\alpha_{1}\left(\sin \left(\frac{u_{1}-u}{2}\right)+\sin \left(\frac{u_{21}-u_{2}}{2}\right)\right)=\alpha_{2}\left(\sin \left(\frac{u_{2}-u}{2}\right)+\sin \left(\frac{u_{12}-u_{1}}{2}\right)\right) .
$$

Now, the above equation becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{1} \sin \left(\frac{U-u+u_{1}-u_{2}}{4}\right)=\alpha_{2} \sin \left(\frac{U-u-\left(u_{1}-u_{2}\right)}{4}\right), \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used the well-known identity $\sin A+\sin B=2 \sin \left(\frac{A+B}{2}\right) \cos \left(\frac{A-B}{2}\right)$.
Finally, using the identity $\sin (A \pm B)=\sin A \cos B \pm \sin B \cos A$, for $A=(U-u) / 4$ and $B=u_{1}-u_{2}$, we deduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tan \left(\frac{U-u}{4}\right)=\frac{\alpha_{1}+\alpha_{2}}{\alpha_{2}-\alpha_{1}} \tan \left(\frac{u_{1}-u_{2}}{4}\right), \tag{2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be solved for $U$ to give (2.28).

Remark 2.3.6 One can verify that $U$ given in (2.28) satisfies both equations (2.26) (where $U=u_{12}$ ) and (2.27) (where $U=u_{21}$ ) modulo equations (2.24) and (2.25). Moreover, it satisfies the corresponding temporal part of equations (2.26) and (2.27).

Remark 2.3.7 Relation (2.28) is nothing else but a nonlinear superposition principle for the production of solutions of the SG equation.

### 2.3.2 Bäcklund transformation for the PKdV equation

An auto-Bäcklund transformation associated to the PKdV equation is given by the following relations

$$
\mathcal{B}_{\alpha}: \begin{cases}(u+v)_{x} & =2 \alpha+\frac{1}{2}(u-v)^{2}  \tag{2.31}\\ (u-v)_{t} & =3\left(u_{x}^{2}-v_{x}^{2}\right)-(u-v)_{x x x}\end{cases}
$$

which was first presented in 1973 in a paper of Wahlquist and Estabrook [90]. In this section we show how we can construct algebraically a solution of the PKdV equation, using Bianchi's permutability.

## Bianchi's permutability: Nonlinear superposition principle of solutions of the PKdV equation

Let $u=u(x, t)$ be a function satisfying the PKdV equation. Focusing on the spatial part of the BT (2.31), we can construct two new solutions, from $u_{1}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{1}}(u)$ and $u_{2}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{2}}(u)$, i.e.

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(u_{1}+u\right)_{x} & =2 \alpha_{1}+\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{1}-u\right)^{2}  \tag{2.32}\\
\left(u_{2}+u\right)_{x} & =2 \alpha_{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{2}-u\right)^{2} \tag{2.33}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, following 2.1-(b), we can construct two more from relations $u_{12}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{2}}\left(u_{1}\right)$ and $u_{21}=\mathcal{B}_{\alpha_{1}}\left(u_{2}\right)$, i.e.

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(u_{12}+u_{1}\right)_{x} & =2 \alpha_{2}+\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{12}-u_{1}\right)^{2}  \tag{2.34}\\
\left(u_{21}+u_{2}\right)_{x} & =2 \alpha_{1}+\frac{1}{2}\left(u_{21}-u_{2}\right)^{2} \tag{2.35}
\end{align*}
$$

Proposition 2.3.8 Imposing the condition $u_{12}=u_{21}$, the BTs $\{(2.32)-(2.35)\}$ imply the following solution of the PKdV equation:

$$
\begin{equation*}
U=u-4 \frac{\alpha_{1}-\alpha_{2}}{u_{1}-u_{2}} . \tag{2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

It is straightforward calculation; one needs to subtract (2.33) and (2.35) by (2.32) and (2.34), respectively, and subtract the resulting equations.

In the next chapter -where we study Darboux transformations for particular NLS type equations- we shall see that BT arise naturally in the derivation of DT.

## Chapter 3

## Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable

## systems

### 3.1 Overview

As we have seen in the previous chapter, Darboux and Bäcklund transformations are closely related to the notion of integrability [80]. They can be derived from Lax pairs in a systematic way, e.g. [20, 21], and provide the means to construct classes of solutions for the integrable equations to which they are related. Moreover, they can be interpreted as differential-difference equations $[10,56,57,67]$ and their commutativity, also referred to as Bianchi's permutability theorem, leads to systems of difference equations $[7,71,78]$.

In this chapter we use Lax operators which are invariant under the action of the reduction group to derive Darboux transformations. We interpret the associated Darboux matrices as Lax matrices of a discrete Lax pair and construct systems of difference equations.

More precisely, our starting point is the general Lax operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=D_{x}+U(p, q ; \lambda) . \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here, the $2 \times 2$ matrix $U$ belongs to the Lie algebra $\mathfrak{s l}(2, \mathbb{C})$, depends implicitly on $x$
through potentials $p, q$, and depends rationally on the spectral parameter $\lambda$. Imposing the invariance of operator $\mathcal{L}$ under the action of the automorphisms of $\mathfrak{s l}(2, \mathbb{C})$, i.e. the reduction group, inequivalent classes of Lax operators can be constructed systematically. This classification of the corresponding automorphic Lie algebras was presented in [60], which were also derived in [16] in a different way.

Because of this construction, the resulting Lax operators have specific $\lambda$-dependence and possess certain symmetries. We shall be assuming that the corresponding Darboux transformations inherit the same $\lambda$-dependence and symmetries, hence the derivation of these transformations is considerably simplified in this context. Once a Darboux transformation has been derived, one may construct algorithmically new fundamental solutions, i.e. solutions of the equation $\mathcal{L} \Psi=0$, from a given initial one using this transformation. Moreover, combining two different Darboux transformations and imposing their commutativity, a set of algebraic relations among the potentials involved in $\mathcal{L}$ results as a necessary condition.

One may interpret these potentials as functions defined on a two dimensional lattice and, consequently, the corresponding algebraic relations among them as a system of difference equations. One interesting characteristic of the resulting discrete systems is their multidimensional consistency $[8,9,15,68,69,72]$. This means that these systems can be extended into a three dimensional lattice in a consistent way and, consequently, in an infinite dimensional lattice.

Another property of these systems, following from their derivation, is that they admit symmetries. The latter are nothing else but the Bäcklund transformation of the corresponding continuous system to which the Lax operator $\mathcal{L}$ is related.

The chapter is organised as follows: In the next section we briefly explain what is a reduction group, what automorphic Lie algebras are and we list the cases of the PDEs we study; the nonlinear Schrödinger equation, the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation and a deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation. In section 3 we present the general scheme we follow to derive Darboux matrices and construct systems of difference equations. Finally, section 4 is devoted to the derivation of Darboux matrices for NLS type equations, while section 5 deals with employing these Darboux matrices to

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
construct discrete integrable systems and their integrable reductions.
The results of this chapter appear in [50].

### 3.2 The reduction group and automorphic Lie algebras

The reduction group was first introduced in [63, 64]. It is a discrete group of automorphisms of a Lax operator, and its elements are simultaneous automorphisms of the corresponding Lie algebra and fractional-linear transformations of the spectral parameter. Automorphic Lie algebras were introduced in [58, 59] and studied in [16, 17, 58, 59, 60]. These algebras constitute a subclass of infinite dimensional Lie algebras and their name is due to their construction which is very similar to the one for automorphic functions.

Following Klein's classification [48] of finite groups of fractional-linear transformations of a complex variable, in $[16,17]$ it has been shown that in the case of $2 \times 2$ matrices, which we study in this chapter, the essentially different reduction groups are

- the trivial group (with no reduction);
- the cyclic reduction group $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ (leading to the Kac-Moody algebra $A_{1}^{1}$ );
- the Klein reduction group $\mathbb{Z}_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2} \cong \mathbb{D}_{2}$.

Reduction groups $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ and $\mathbb{D}_{2}$ have both degenerate and generic orbits. Degenerate are those orbits that correspond to the fixed points of the fractional-linear transformations of the spectral paramater, while the others are called generic.

Now, the following Lax operators

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{L} & =D_{x}+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)  \tag{3.2a}\\
\mathcal{L} & =D_{x}+\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)  \tag{3.2b}\\
\mathcal{L} & =D_{x}+\left(\lambda^{2}-\lambda^{-2}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 q \\
2 p & 0
\end{array}\right), \tag{3.2c}
\end{align*}
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
constitute all the essential different Lax operators, with poles of minimal order, invariant with respect to the generators of $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ and $\mathbb{D}_{2}$ groups with degenerate orbits. In what follows, we study the Darboux transformations for all the above cases.

Operator (3.2a) is associated with the NLS equation [93],

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}=p_{x x}+4 p^{2} q, \quad q_{t}=-q_{x x}-4 p q^{2}, \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

while (3.2b) and (3.2c) are associated with the DNLS equation [47],

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}=p_{x x}+4\left(p^{2} q\right)_{x}, \quad q_{t}=-q_{x x}+4\left(p q^{2}\right)_{x} \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

and a deformation of the DNLS equation [65]

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{t}=p_{x x}+8\left(p^{2} q\right)_{x}-4 q_{x}, \quad q_{t}=-q_{x x}+8\left(p q^{2}\right)_{x}-4 p_{x}, \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively.

### 3.3 General framework

In this section we present the general framework for the derivation of Darboux matrices related to Lax operators of AKNS type. Moreover, we explain how we can employ these Darboux matrices to construct discrete integrable systems.

### 3.3.1 Derivation of Darboux matrices

The Lax operators which we consider in the rest of this thesis are of the following AKNS form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda)=D_{x}+U(p, q ; \lambda), \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U$ is a $2 \times 2$ traceless matrix which belongs in the Lie algebra $\mathfrak{s l}(2, \mathbb{C})$, depends implicitly on $x$ through the potential functions $p$ and $q$ and is a rational function in the

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
spectral parameter $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$. We also require that the dependence on the spectral parameter is nontrivial ${ }^{1}$.

Remark 3.3.1 In the forthcoming analysis we shall only be needing the spatial part of the Lax pair of the associated PDEs.

In what follows, by Darboux transformation we understand a map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L} \rightarrow \tilde{\mathcal{L}}=M \mathcal{L} M^{-1}, \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{\mathcal{L}}$ has exactly the same form as $\mathcal{L}$ but updated with new potentials $p_{10}$ and $q_{10}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathcal{L}}=D_{x}+U\left(p_{10}, q_{10} ; \lambda\right) . \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Matrix $M$ in (3.7) is an invertible matrix called the Darboux matrix.
According to definition (3.7), a Darboux matrix may depend on any of the potential functions $p, q, p_{10}$ and $q_{10}$, and the spectral parameter $\lambda$. Moreover, given a Lax operator $\mathcal{L}$, we can calculate the Darboux matrix using the following.

Proposition 3.3.2 Given a Lax operator of the form (3.6), the Darboux matrix, M, satisfies the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
D_{x} M+U_{10} M-M U=0 \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U_{10}=U\left(p_{10}, q_{10} ; \lambda\right)$.

## Proof

By definition of the Darboux transformation we have that $\tilde{\mathcal{L}} M=M \mathcal{L}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(D_{x}+U\left(p_{10}, q_{10} ; \lambda\right)\right) M=M\left(D_{x}+U(p, q ; \lambda)\right) . \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^3]Therefore, since $D_{x} \cdot M=M_{x}+M D_{x}$, the above equation implies that $M$ must obey equation (3.9).

Although the above proposition can be used to determine $M$, this cannot be done in full generality without making choices for $M$ and analysing its dependence on the spectral parameter $\lambda$.

Our first choice will be based on the following.

Proposition 3.3.3 A composition of two Darboux matrices for an operator of the form (3.6) is a Darboux matrix for the same operator.

## Proof

Let $M$ and $K$ be Darboux matrices for an operator $\mathcal{L}$ of the form (3.6). Then,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathcal{L}} M=M \mathcal{L}, \quad \hat{\mathcal{L}} K=K \mathcal{L} . \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

by definition of the Darboux matrix. Now,

$$
\begin{equation*}
K M \mathcal{L} \stackrel{(3.11)}{=} K \tilde{\mathcal{L}} M \stackrel{(3.11)}{=} \hat{\tilde{L}} K M \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, $\hat{\mathcal{L}}=K M \mathcal{L}(K M)^{-1}$ which proves the statement.

We define the rank of a Darboux transformation to be the rank of the matrix which appears as coefficient of the higher power of the spectral parameter. In the next sections, we shall be assuming that the Darboux tranformations are of rank 1 ; in fact, in some examples, Darboux transformations of full rank can be written as composition of Darboux transformations of rank 1 .

The second choice is related to the form of the corresponding Lax operators. Since the Lax operators we deal with have rational dependence on the spectral parameter, we impose without loss of generality, that the same holds for matrix $M$ as well. Moreover, we employ any symmetries of the Lax operator, $\mathcal{L}$, as symmetries inherited to $M$. Specifically, if the

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
the Lax operator ${ }^{2} \mathcal{L}(\lambda)$ satisfies a relation of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}(\lambda)=\Sigma(\lambda) \mathcal{L}(\sigma(\lambda)) \Sigma(\lambda)^{-1} \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some invertible function $\sigma(\lambda)$ and some invertible matrix $\Sigma(\lambda)$, then we shall be assuming that $M$ must obey the same relation, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\lambda)=\Sigma(\lambda) M(\sigma(\lambda)) \Sigma(\lambda)^{-1} \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Relation (3.14) imposes some restrictions on the form of matrix $M$ and reduces the number of functions involved in it.

Now, let $M$ be a Darboux matrix for the operator $\mathcal{L}$, and $\Psi=\Psi(x, \lambda)$ a fundamental solution of the linear equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L} \Psi(x, \lambda)=0 \tag{3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we have the following.

Proposition 3.3.4 Matrix $M$ maps fundamental solutions of (3.15) to fundamental solutions of $\tilde{\mathcal{L}} \Psi=0$. Moreover, the determinant of $M$ is independent of $x$.

## Proof

Let $M$ map $\Psi$ to $\Psi_{10}$, namely $\Psi_{10}=M \Psi$. Then, according to (3.7)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{\mathcal{L}} \Psi_{10}=M \mathcal{L} M^{-1} \Psi_{10}=M \mathcal{L} M^{-1}(M \Psi)=M \mathcal{L} \Psi=0 \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e. $\Psi_{10}$ is a solution of $\tilde{\mathcal{L}} \Psi=0$. Moreover, $\Psi_{10}$ is fundamental, since $\Psi$ is fundamental, $\operatorname{det} M \neq 0$ and $\Psi_{10}=M \Psi$.

Now, recall Liouville's formula ${ }^{3}$ for solutions of the linear equation $L \Psi=0$, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det} \Psi(x, t ; \lambda)=\operatorname{det} \Psi\left(x_{0}, t ; \lambda\right) \exp \left(-\int_{x_{0}}^{x} \operatorname{tr} U(p(\xi), q(\xi) ; \lambda) d \xi\right) . \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since $U$ is traceless, from the above formula we deduce that the determinants of $\Psi$ and $\Psi_{10}$ are non-zero and independent of $x$. Hence, the relation $\Psi_{10}=M \Psi$ implies that $\partial_{x}(\operatorname{det}(M))=0$.

[^4]
### 3.3.2 Discrete Lax pairs and discrete systems

Starting with a fundamental solution of equation (3.15), say $\Psi$, we can employ two Darboux matrices to derive two new fundamental solutions $\Psi_{10}$ and $\Psi_{01}$ as follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{10}=M\left(p, q, p_{10}, q_{10} ; \lambda\right) \Psi \equiv M \Psi, \quad \Psi_{01}=M\left(p, q, p_{01}, q_{01} ; \lambda\right) \Psi \equiv K \Psi . \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, a third solution can be derived in a purely algebraic way as shown in Figure 3.1.


Figure 3.1: Bianchi commuting diagram

Specifically, starting with two fundamental solutions of equation (3.15), $\Psi_{10}$ and $\Psi_{01}$, one can construct two new fundamental solutions using Darboux matrices

$$
M\left(p_{10}, q_{10}, p_{11}, q_{11} ; \lambda\right) \equiv K_{10} \quad M\left(p_{01}, q_{01}, p_{11}, q_{11} ; \lambda\right) \equiv M_{01}
$$

namely the following

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathcal{X}:=M_{01} \Psi_{01}=M_{01} K \Psi \equiv M\left(p_{01}, q_{01}, p_{11}, q_{11} ; \lambda\right) M\left(p, q, p_{01}, q_{01} ; \lambda\right) \Psi, \\
& \mathcal{Y}:=K_{10} \Psi_{10}=K_{10} M \Psi \equiv M\left(p_{10}, q_{10}, p_{11}, q_{11} ; \lambda\right) M\left(p, q, p_{10}, q_{10} ; \lambda\right) \Psi .
\end{aligned}
$$

Imposing that these two different solutions coincide, i.e. $\mathcal{X}=\mathcal{Y}=\Psi_{11}$ (see Figure 3.1), the following condition must hold

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{01} K-K_{10} M=0 . \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

If the latter condition is written out explicitly, it results in algebraic relations among the various potentials involved.

We can interpret the above construction in a discrete way. Particularly, let us assume that $p$ and $q$ are functions depending not only on $x$ but also on two discrete variables $n$ and $m$,

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
i.e. $p=p(x ; n, m)$ and $q=q(x ; n, m)$. Furthermore, we define the shift operators $\mathcal{S}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ acting on a function $f=f(n, m)$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{S} f(n, m)=f(n+1, m), \quad \mathcal{T} f(n, m)=f(n, m+1) \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

We shall refer to $\mathcal{S}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ as the shift operators in the $n$ and the $m$-direction, respectively. Now, we expect that the shift operators $\mathcal{S}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ commute with each other and with the differential operator $\partial_{x}$. In particular, we have the following.

Proposition 3.3.5 The shift operators $\mathcal{S}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ commute with each other and also with the partial differential operator on solutions of $\mathcal{L} \Psi=0$.

## Proof

Let $\Psi$ be a solution of $\mathcal{L} \Psi=0$. For the commutativity of $\mathcal{S}$ and $\mathcal{T}$ we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{T S} \Psi=\mathcal{T}(M \Psi)=M_{01} \Psi_{01}=M_{01} K \Psi \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

and on the other hand

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{S T} \Psi=\mathcal{S}(K \Psi)=K_{10} \Psi_{10}=K_{10} M \Psi \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

which proves that $[S, T] \Psi=0$, due to (3.19).
Now, we prove the commutativity between the shift operator $\mathcal{S}$ and the partial differential operator, and the proof is exactly the same for $\mathcal{T}$. We basically need to show that $\mathcal{S} \Psi_{x}=$ $(\mathcal{S} \Psi)_{x}$. Indeed,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{S} \Psi)_{x}=\partial_{x} \Psi_{10} \stackrel{(3.18)}{=}(M \Psi)_{x}=M_{x} \Psi+M \Psi_{x} \stackrel{(3.6)}{=} M_{x} \Psi-M U \Psi \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{S} \Psi_{x} \stackrel{(3.6)}{=}-\mathcal{S}(U \Psi)=-U_{10} \Psi_{10} \stackrel{(3.18)}{=}-U_{10} M \Psi \tag{3.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Due to proposition 3.3.2, the right hand sides of (3.24) and (3.23) are equal which completes the proof.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

In addition, we interpret the shifts of $p$ and $q$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{i j}=p(x ; n+i, m+j), \quad q_{i j}=q(x ; n+i, m+j), \quad p_{00} \equiv p, \quad q_{00} \equiv q, \tag{3.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively.

In this notation, system (3.18) can be considered as a discrete Lax pair, and equation (3.19) is nothing but its compatibility condition. Furthermore, the resulting polynomials from condition (3.19) define a system of partial difference equations for $p$ and $q$.

Note 3.3.6 For the sake of simplicity, in the rest of the thesis, we adopt the following notation: the derivative with respect to $x$ of a scalar object with lower indices, say $\partial_{x} p_{i j}$, will be denoted by $p_{i j, x}$. Moreover, for a matrix with lower index, say $M_{0}$, with $M_{0, i j}$ we shall denote its $(i, j)$-element.

Now let $\mathbf{u}$ be a solution of a system of difference equations, $\Delta(\mathbf{u})=0$. Moreover, let $\overline{\mathbf{u}}$ be given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\overline{\mathbf{u}}:=R_{\epsilon}(\mathbf{u})=\mathbf{u}+\epsilon r(\mathbf{u}), \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

were $\epsilon$ is an infinitesimal parameter. We have the following ([66]).

Definition 3.3.7 We shall say that $R_{\epsilon}(\boldsymbol{u})$ constitutes an infinitensimal symmetry -or just a symmetry- of $\Delta(\boldsymbol{u})=0$, if $\overline{\boldsymbol{u}}:=R_{\epsilon}(\boldsymbol{u})$ is also a solution up to order $\epsilon^{2}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta(\overline{\boldsymbol{u}})=\mathcal{O}\left(\epsilon^{2}\right) \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Corollary 3.3.8 Map $R_{\epsilon}(\boldsymbol{u})$ defined in (3.26) is a symmetry of a system of difference equations, $\Delta(\boldsymbol{u})$, if the following condition ${ }^{4}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i, j \in \mathbb{Z}} \frac{\partial \Delta}{\partial \boldsymbol{u}_{i j}} \mathcal{S}^{i} \mathcal{T}^{j} r(\boldsymbol{u})=0 \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

is satisfied $\bmod \langle\Delta(\boldsymbol{u})=0\rangle$.

[^5]Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

## Proof

If we expand $\Delta(\mathbf{u}+\epsilon r(\mathbf{u}))$ in series, then equating the $\epsilon$-terms, (3.27) implies (3.28).

In the next section we shall see for particular examples that, the derivation of Darboux matrices gives rise to particular differential-difference equations which possess first integrals. In some cases, the latter may be used to reduce the number of the dependent variables and derive scalar equations; some of them are of Toda type and some others are defined on a stencil of six or seven points. Additionally, the form of these systems allows us to pose an initial value problem on the staircase.

The derived system of differential-difference equations is, in general, of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}\left(p, q, \partial_{x} p, \partial_{x} q, \partial_{x} p_{10}, \partial_{x} q_{10}\right)=0 \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, in all the examples of this thesis, system (3.29) boils down to an evolutionary differential-difference system of equations of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{p}_{x}=\mathbf{Z}\left(\mathbf{p}, \mathbf{p}_{10}\right), \quad \mathbf{p}=(p, q) \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and its shifted consequences.
For the above system of equations we have the following.

Proposition 3.3.9 The differential-difference equations (3.30) constitute generators of generalised symmetries of the associated system of difference equations.

## Proof

Indeed,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\left(M_{01} K-K_{10} M\right)=M_{01, x} K+M_{01} K_{x}-K_{10, x} M-K_{10} M_{x} \tag{3.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, according to Proposition 3.3.2 we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
& M_{x}=M U-U_{10} M, \quad M_{01, x}=M_{01} U_{01}-U_{11} M_{01} \\
& K_{x}=K U-U_{01} K, \quad K_{10, x}=K_{10} U_{10}-U_{11} K_{10}
\end{aligned}
$$

Therefore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d x}\left(M_{01} K-K_{10} M\right)=U_{11}\left(K_{10} M-M_{01} K\right)+\left(M_{01} K-K_{10} M\right) U \tag{3.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

The right-hand-side of the above is zero $\bmod \left\langle K_{10} M-M_{01} K=0\right\rangle$ which proves the statement.

Note 3.3.10 System (3.30) is nothing but the $x$-part (spatial-part) of a Bäcklund transformation between solutions of the PDE associated to the Lax operator.

In the next section we derive Darboux matrices for particular PDEs of NLS type; the NLS equation, the DNLS equation and a deformation of the DNLS equation.

In all the above cases, we find more than one Darboux matrix. At this point it is worth mentioning that, the interpretation of any pair of Darboux matrices as a discrete Lax pair does not always lead to a discrete integrable system. On the contrary, in several cases, the compatibility condition (3.19) yields a trivial system.

### 3.4 NLS type equations

In this section we study the Darboux transformations related to the NLS type equations discussed earlier.

As an illustrative example, we start with the NLS equation.

### 3.4.1 The nonlinear Schrödinger equation

The Lax operator in this case is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}:=D_{x}+U(p, q ; \lambda)=D_{x}+\lambda U^{1}+U^{0} \tag{3.33a}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U^{1}$ and $U^{0}$ are given by

$$
U^{1} \equiv \sigma_{3}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1), \quad U^{0}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p  \tag{3.33b}\\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Operator $\mathcal{L}$ is the spatial part of the Lax pair for the nonlinear Schrödinger equation.
The NLS equation has the following scaling symmetry

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{10}=\alpha \beta^{-1} p, \quad q_{10}=\beta \alpha^{-1} q . \tag{3.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

A spectral parameter independent Darboux matrix corresponding to the above symmetry is given by the following constant matrix

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\alpha & 0  \tag{3.35}\\
0 & \beta
\end{array}\right), \quad \alpha \beta \neq 0
$$

Now, we seek Darboux matrices which depend on the spectral parameter, $\lambda$. The simplest $\lambda$-dependence is a linear dependence. In particular, we have the following.

Proposition 3.4.1 Let $M$ be a Darboux matrix for the Lax operator (3.33) and suppose it is linear in $\lambda$. Let also $M$ define a Darboux transformation of rank 1. Then, up to a gauge transformation, $M$ is given by

$$
M\left(p, q_{10}, f\right):=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{3.36}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
q_{10} & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

where the potentials $p$ and $q$ satisfy the following differential-difference equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& \partial_{x} f=2\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right),  \tag{3.37a}\\
& \partial_{x} p=2\left(p f-p_{10}\right),  \tag{3.37b}\\
& \partial_{x} q_{10}=2\left(q-q_{10} f\right) . \tag{3.37c}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, matrix (3.36) degenerates to

$$
M_{c}(p, f)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0  \tag{3.38}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
\frac{c}{p} & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad f=\frac{p_{x}}{2 p} .
$$

## Proof

Let us suppose that $M$ is of the form $M=\lambda M_{1}+M_{0}$. Substitution of $M$ to equation (3.9) implies a second order algebraic equation in $\lambda$. Equating the coefficients of the several
powers of $\lambda$ equal to zero, we obtain the following system of equations

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lambda^{2}: & {\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{1}\right]=0,} \\
\lambda^{1}: & M_{1, x}+\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{0}\right]+U_{10}^{0} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{0}=0, \\
\lambda^{0}: & M_{0, x}+U_{10}^{0} M_{0}-M_{0} U^{0}=0, \tag{3.39c}
\end{array}
$$

where with $\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{1}\right]$ we denote the commutator of $\sigma_{3}$ and $M_{1}$.
Equation (3.39a) implies that $M_{1}$ must be diagonal, i.e. $M_{1}=\operatorname{diag}\left(c_{1}, c_{2}\right)$. Then, we substitute $M_{1}$ to (3.39b).

Now, for simplicity of the notation, we denote the $(1,1)$ and $(2,2)$ entries of $M_{0}$ by $f$ and $g$ respectively. Then, it follows from equation (3.39c) that the entries of matrix $M_{0}$ must satisfy the following equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} f & =2\left(M_{0,12} q-p_{10} M_{0,21}\right),  \tag{3.40a}\\
\partial_{x} g & =2\left(M_{0,21} p-q_{10} M_{0,12}\right),  \tag{3.40b}\\
\partial_{x} M_{0,12} & =2\left(p f-g p_{10}\right),  \tag{3.40c}\\
\partial_{x} M_{0,21} & =2\left(q g-q_{10} f\right) . \tag{3.40d}
\end{align*}
$$

The off-diagonal part of (3.39b) implies that the $(1,2)$ and $(2,1)$ entries of matrix $M_{0}$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{0,12}=c_{1} p-c_{2} p_{10}, \quad M_{0,21}=c_{1} q_{10}-c_{2} q \tag{3.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Additionally, from the diagonal part of (3.39b) we deduce that $c_{1, x}=c_{2, x}=0$. Since the Darboux transformation is of rank one, namely rank $M_{1}=1$, one of the constants $c_{i}$, $i=1,2$ must be zero. Thus, after rescaling we can choose either $c_{1}=1, c_{2}=0$ or $c_{1}=0$, $c_{2}=-1$. These two choices correspond to gauge equivalent Darboux matrices.

Indeed, the choice $c_{1}=1, c_{2}=0$ implies $M_{0,12}=p$ and $M_{0,21}=q_{10}$. Moreover, (3.40b) implies that $g=$ const. $=\alpha$, i.e.

$$
M_{0}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p  \tag{3.42}\\
q_{10} & \alpha
\end{array}\right)
$$

In this case the Darboux matrix is given by

$$
\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{3.43}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
q_{10} & \alpha
\end{array}\right)
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
where, according to (3.40), its entries satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x} f=2\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right), \quad \partial_{x} p=2\left(p f-\alpha p_{10}\right), \quad \partial_{x} q_{10}=2\left(c q-q_{10} f\right) . \tag{3.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, if $\alpha \neq 0$, it can be rescaled to $\alpha=1$ and thus the Darboux matrix in this case is given by (3.36) where its entries obey (3.37).

Similarly, the second choice, $c_{1}=0, c_{2}=-1$, leads to the following Darboux matrix

$$
N\left(p_{10}, q, g\right)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 0  \tag{3.45}\\
0 & -1
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & p_{10} \\
q & g
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The above is gauge equivalent to (3.36), since $\sigma_{1} N\left(p_{10}, q, g\right) \sigma_{1}^{-1}$ is of the form (3.36).
Therefore, a linear in $\lambda$ Darboux matrix is given by (3.36) where its entries obey the differential-difference equations (3.37).

In the case where $\alpha=0$, from (3.44) we deduce

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{x}=2 f p, \quad q_{10, x}=-2 f q_{10} . \tag{3.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the Darboux matrix in this case is given by

$$
M\left(p, q_{10}, f\right):=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{3.47}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right) .
$$

In addition, after an integration with respect to $x$, equations (3.46) imply that $q_{10}=c / p$. Hence, the Darboux matrix in this case is given by (3.38).

It is straightforward to show that system (3.37) admits the following first integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f-p q_{10}\right)=0 . \tag{3.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies that $\partial_{x} \operatorname{det} M=0$.

### 3.4.2 The derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation: $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-reduction group

The Lax operator in this case is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=D_{x}+\lambda^{2} U^{2}+\lambda U^{1}, \tag{3.49a}
\end{equation*}
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
where

$$
U^{2}=\sigma_{3}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1) \quad \text { and } \quad U^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p  \tag{3.49b}\\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This is the spatial part of the Lax pair for the DNLS equation (3.4), and it is invariant under the transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1}(\lambda): \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{3} \mathcal{L}(-\lambda) \sigma_{3} \tag{3.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

As a matter of fact, the above involution generates the reduction group which is isomorphic to the $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ group.

As in the case of the NLS equation, the DNLS equation has the following scaling symmetry

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{10}=\alpha \beta^{-1} p, \quad q_{10}=\beta \alpha^{-1} q . \tag{3.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

A spectral parameter independent Darboux matrix corresponding to the above symmetry is given by the following constant matrix

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\alpha & 0  \tag{3.52}\\
0 & \beta
\end{array}\right), \quad \alpha \beta \neq 0
$$

Now, we seek Darboux matrices with the same $\lambda$-dependence as the non-differential part of (3.49), namely of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=\lambda^{2} M_{2}+\lambda M_{1}+M_{0} \tag{3.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 3.4.2 A second order matrix polynomial in $\lambda$, of the form (3.53), is invariant under the involution (3.50), iff $M_{2}$ and $M_{0}$ are diagonal matrices and $M_{1}$ is off-diagonal.

## Proof

It is straightforward if we demand that $M$ satisfies the condition: $M(\lambda)=\sigma_{3} M(-\lambda) \sigma_{3}$.

As mentioned earlier, we shall restrict ourselves to Darboux transformations of rank 1, and we have the following.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Proposition 3.4.3 Let $M$ in (3.53) be a Darboux matrix for the Lax operator (3.49) that is invariant under the involution (3.50) and rank $M_{2}=1$. Then, up to a gauge transformation, $M$ is given by

$$
M\left(p, q_{10}, f ; c_{1}, c_{2}\right):=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & 0  \tag{3.54}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & f p \\
f q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
c_{1} & 0 \\
0 & c_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $p$ and $q$ satisfy the following differential-difference equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} f & =2 f\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right)  \tag{3.55a}\\
\partial_{x} p & =2 p\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)-2 \frac{c_{2} p_{10}-c_{1} p}{f}  \tag{3.55b}\\
\partial_{x} q_{10} & =2 q_{10}\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)-2 \frac{c_{1} q_{10}-c_{2} q}{f} \tag{3.55c}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

According to Lemma (3.4.2), matrix $M_{2}$ should be diagonal. Additionally, since rank $M_{2}=1$, we consider $M_{2}$ to be of the form $M_{2}=\operatorname{diag}(f, 0)$. The choise $M_{2}=\operatorname{diag}(0, g)$ leads to a gauge equivalent Darboux transformation.

Now, 3.9 implies that $M$ satisfies the following system of equations

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lambda^{4}: & {\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{2}\right]=0,} \\
\lambda^{3}: & {\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{1}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{2}-M_{2} U^{1}=0,} \\
\lambda^{2}: & M_{2, x}+\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{0}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{1}=0, \\
\lambda^{1}: & M_{1, x}+U_{10}^{1} M_{0}-M_{0} U^{1}=0, \\
\lambda^{0}: & M_{0, x}=0 . \tag{3.56e}
\end{array}
$$

The first one, (3.56a), is satisfied automatically since $M_{2}$ is diagonal. Moreover, the last one, (3.56e), implies that $M_{0}$ is constant, i.e. $M_{0}=\operatorname{diag}\left(c_{1}, c_{2}\right)$, where $c_{1}, c_{2} \in \mathbb{C}$.

From equation (3.56b) we determine the entries of the off-diagonal matrix $M_{1}$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1,12}=f p \quad \text { and } \quad M_{1,21}=f q_{10} \tag{3.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

That is, $M$ is given by (3.54).
Equation (3.56c) implies the first differential-difference equation (3.55a), while equation (3.56d) implies the following

$$
\begin{equation*}
(f p)_{x}=2 c_{1} p-2 c_{2} p_{10} \quad \text { and } \quad\left(f q_{10}\right)_{x}=2 c_{2} q-2 c_{1} q_{10} . \tag{3.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

With use of (3.55a), the above equations can be rewritten in the form (3.55b) and (3.55c), respectively.

A first integral of the differential-difference equations (3.55) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f^{2} p q_{10}-c_{2} f\right)=0 \tag{3.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above integral guarantees that the determinant of the Darboux matrix (3.54) is independent of $x$.

Remark 3.4.4 If the constants $c_{1}$ and $c_{2}$ in (3.54) are non-zero, then we can rescale them to 1 , by composing with a Darboux matrix (3.52) and changing $f \rightarrow f \alpha^{-1}$ and $q_{10} \rightarrow$ $q_{10} \alpha \beta^{-1}$.

However, if either of $c_{1}$ or $c_{2}$ is zero, we can bring the differential-difference equations (3.55) into polynomial form.

Case I: $c_{1}=c_{2}=0$. Modified Volterra chain

In this case, from equations (3.58), we obtain $(f p)_{x}=\left(f q_{10}\right)_{x}=0$. An integration of the latter implies that $f=1 / p$ and $q_{10}=p$, where we have set the constants of integration equal to 1 . Hence, the Darboux matrix (3.54) degenerates to

$$
M_{d e g}(p):=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 / p & 0  \tag{3.60}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Moreover, the corresponding differential-difference equations become

$$
\begin{equation*}
q_{10}=p \quad \partial_{x} p=2 p^{2}\left(p_{10}-p_{-10}\right), \tag{3.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the first integral (3.59) holds identically. The resulting differential-difference equations (3.61) constitute the modified Volterra chain [91].

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Case II: $c_{1}=1$ and $c_{2}=0$

In this case the Darboux matrix simplifies to

$$
M\left(p, q_{10}, f\right):=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
f & 0  \tag{3.62}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & f p \\
f q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

The differential-difference equations (3.55) become

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} f & =2 f\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right)  \tag{3.63a}\\
\partial_{x} p & =2 p\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)+\frac{2 p}{f}  \tag{3.63b}\\
\partial_{x} q_{10} & =2 q_{10}\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)-\frac{2 q_{10}}{f} \tag{3.63c}
\end{align*}
$$

and the first integral (3.59) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f^{2} p q_{10}\right)=0 \tag{3.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, in order to express $f$ in terms of $p$ and $q$, avoiding any square roots, we make the following point transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
p=u^{2}, \quad q=v_{-10}^{2} . \tag{3.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, the first integral (3.64) implies $f^{2} u^{2} v^{2}=1$ and, subsequently, $f$ is given by $f=$ $\pm 1 / u v$. Moreover, for this $f$, system (3.63) can be rewritten in a polynomial form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x} u=u\left(u_{10}^{2} v^{2}-u^{2} v_{-10}^{2}\right) \pm u^{2} v, \quad \partial_{x} v=v\left(u_{10}^{2} v^{2}-u^{2} v_{-10}^{2}\right) \mp u v^{2} . \tag{3.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.4.3 A deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation: Dihedral reduction group

In this case, the Lax operator ${ }^{5}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=D_{x}+\lambda^{2} U^{2}+\lambda U^{1}+\lambda^{-1} U^{-1}+\lambda^{-2} U^{-2} \tag{3.67a}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^6]Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
where

$$
U^{2} \equiv-U^{-2}=\sigma_{3}, \quad U^{1} \equiv\left(U^{-1}\right)^{T}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p  \tag{3.67b}\\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Operator (3.67) is the spatial part of the Lax pair of the deformation of the DNLS equation (3.5) , and it is invariant under the following transformations

$$
\begin{align*}
& s_{1}(\lambda): \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{3} \mathcal{L}(-\lambda) \sigma_{3}  \tag{3.68a}\\
& s_{2}(\lambda): \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{1} \mathcal{L}\left(\frac{1}{\lambda}\right) \sigma_{1}, \quad \sigma_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) . \tag{3.68b}
\end{align*}
$$

The above involutions generate the reduction group which is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2} \cong \mathbb{D}_{2}$ (dihedral group).

Equation (3.5) has the obvious symmetry $(p, q) \rightarrow(-p,-q)$. A spectral parameter independent Darboux matrix for (3.67), which corresponds to the latter symmetry, is given by $\sigma_{3}$. For a $\lambda$-dependent Darboux matrix, we seek a matrix with the same dependence on the spectral parameter as the non-differential part of $\mathcal{L}$ in (3.67). Specifically, we are seeking for $M$ of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=\lambda^{2} M_{2}+\lambda M+M_{0}+\lambda^{-1} M_{-1}+\lambda^{-2} M_{-2} . \tag{3.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

Lemma 3.4.5 A matrix of the form (3.69), which is invariant under the involutions $s_{1}$ and $s_{2}$ in (3.68), is given by
$M=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}\alpha & 0 \\ 0 & \beta\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}0 & \gamma \\ \delta & 0\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}\mu & 0 \\ 0 & \nu\end{array}\right)+\lambda^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{ll}0 & \delta \\ \gamma & 0\end{array}\right)+\lambda^{-2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}\beta & 0 \\ 0 & \alpha\end{array}\right)$.

## Proof

Relation $M(\lambda)=\sigma_{3} M(-\lambda) \sigma_{3}$ implies that $M_{0}, M_{2}$ and $M_{-2}$ must be diagonal, whereas $M_{1}$ and $M_{-1}$ must be off-diagonal. Moreover, from relation $M(\lambda)=\sigma_{1} M(1 / \lambda) \sigma_{1}$, we obtain: $M_{2,11}=M_{-2,22}, M_{2,22}=M_{-2,11}, M_{1,12}=M_{1,21}$ and $M_{1,21}=M_{1,12}$.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Proposition 3.4.6 Let $M$ be a Darboux matrix of the form (3.69) for the Lax operator (3.67) and rank $M_{2}=1$. Moreover, suppose that it is invariant under the involutions $s_{1}$ and $s_{2}$. Then, up to a gauge transformation and an additive constant, $M$ is given by

$$
M\left(p, q_{10}, f, g\right):=f\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda^{2} & 0  \tag{3.70}\\
0 & \lambda^{-2}
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & p \\
q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right)+g I+\lambda^{-1}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & q_{10} \\
p & 0
\end{array}\right)\right)
$$

where $I$ is the identity matrix and $p, q, f$ and $g$ satisfy the following system of differentialdifference equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} p & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) p+\left(p-p_{10}\right) g+q-q_{10}\right)  \tag{3.71a}\\
\partial_{x} q_{10} & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) q_{10}+\left(q-q_{10}\right) g+p-p_{10}\right)  \tag{3.71b}\\
\partial_{x} g & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) g+\left(p-p_{10}\right) p+\left(q-q_{10}\right) q_{10}\right)  \tag{3.71c}\\
\partial_{x} f & =2\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right) f . \tag{3.71d}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

From equation (3.9) we deduce the system of equations

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lambda^{4}: & {\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{2}\right]=0} \\
\lambda^{3}: & {\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{1}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{2}-M_{2} U^{1}=0,} \\
\lambda^{2}: & M_{2, x}+U_{10}^{1} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{1}=0, \\
\lambda^{1}: & M_{1, x}+\left[\sigma_{3}, M_{-1}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{0}-M_{0} U^{1}+U_{10}^{-1} M_{2}-M_{2} U^{-1}=0, \\
\lambda^{0}: & M_{0, x}+U_{10}^{1} M_{1}-M_{-1} U^{1}+U_{10}^{-1} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{-1}=0, \tag{3.72e}
\end{array}
$$

for the entries of $M$. Because of the symmetry, the negative powers of $\lambda$ correspond to the same equations as the above.

Equation (3.72a) is automatically satisfied as $M_{2}$ is diagonal. From equation (3.72b) we identify the entries $\gamma$ and $\delta$ of matrix $M_{1}$ in terms of the potentials, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma=\alpha p-\beta p_{10} \quad \text { and } \quad \delta=\alpha q_{10}-\beta q, \tag{3.73}
\end{equation*}
$$

whereas from (3.72d) we can express their derivatives in terms of the potentials and the entries of matrices $M_{2}$ and $M_{0}$ as

$$
\begin{align*}
& \gamma_{x}=2\left(\alpha q-\beta q_{10}+\mu p-\nu p_{10}-\delta\right)  \tag{3.74a}\\
& \delta_{x}=2\left(\beta p-\alpha p_{10}+\nu q-\mu q_{10}+\gamma\right) \tag{3.74b}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, from equation (3.72c) we obtain the derivatives of $\alpha$ and $\beta$ in terms of the potentials, $\gamma$ and $\delta$, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{x}=2\left(\gamma q-\delta p_{10}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad \beta_{x}=2\left(\delta p-\gamma q_{10}\right) \tag{3.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting (3.73) into the above equations, we deduce that $\alpha \beta=$ const. Moreover, since rank $M_{2}=1$, either $\alpha$ or $\beta$ has to be zero. Thus, we can choose $\beta=0$ and, then, $\alpha$ can be any arbitrary function of $x$, say $\alpha=f(x)$. The case $\alpha=0$ and $\beta=f(x)$ leads to a Darboux matrix which is gauge equivalent to the former.

Now, $\alpha=f(x)$ and $\beta=0$ imply that $\gamma=f p$ and $\delta=f q_{10}$ from (3.73).
The last equation of (3.72) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{x}=\nu_{x}=2 f\left(p\left(p-p_{10}\right)+q\left(q-q_{10}\right)\right) . \tag{3.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, after a simple integration, we deduce that $\mu=\nu$ (where we have assumed that the integration constant is zero).

Now, the first equation of (3.75) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{x}=2 f\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right) . \tag{3.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the above, and since we have expressed $\gamma$ and $\delta$ in terms of $f, p$ and $q_{10}$, equations (3.74) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{align*}
p_{x} & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) p+q-q_{10}+\frac{\mu}{f}\left(p-p_{10}\right)\right)  \tag{3.78a}\\
q_{10, x} & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) q_{10}+p-p_{10}+\frac{\mu}{f}\left(q-q_{10}\right)\right) . \tag{3.78b}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, without any loss of generality, we can $\operatorname{set}^{6} \mu=f g$, which proves the statement.

It is straightforward to show that the quantities

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi_{1}:=f^{2}\left(g-p q_{10}\right), \quad \Phi_{2}:=f^{2}\left(g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}\right), \tag{3.79}
\end{equation*}
$$

are first integrals for the system of equations (3.71), namely $\partial_{x} \Phi_{i}=0, i=1,2$. In fact, these first integrals imply that matrix $M$ has constant determinant, since

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det} M=\left(\lambda^{2}+\lambda^{-2}\right) \Phi_{1}+\Phi_{2} \tag{3.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^7]
### 3.5 Derivation of discrete systems and initial value problems

In this section we employ the Darboux matrices derived in the previous section to derive discrete integrable systems. We shall present only the pairs of Darboux matrices which lead to genuinely non-trivial discrete integrable systems. For these systems we consider an initial value problem on the staircase.

### 3.5.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation and related discrete systems

Having derived two Darboux matrices for operator (3.33), we focus on the one given in (3.36) and consider the following discrete Lax pair

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{10}=M \Psi, \quad \Psi_{01}=K \Psi \tag{3.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M$ and $K$ are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& M \equiv M\left(p, q_{10}, f\right)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
q_{10} & 1
\end{array}\right)  \tag{3.82a}\\
& K \equiv M\left(p, q_{01}, g\right)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
g & p \\
q_{01} & 1
\end{array}\right) \tag{3.82b}
\end{align*}
$$

The compatibility condition of (3.82) results to

$$
\begin{align*}
f_{01}-f-\left(g_{10}-g\right) & =0  \tag{3.83a}\\
f_{01} g-f g_{10}-p_{10} q_{10}+p_{01} q_{01} & =0  \tag{3.83b}\\
p\left(f_{01}-g_{10}\right)-p_{10}+p_{01} & =0  \tag{3.83c}\\
q_{11}(f-g)-q_{01}+q_{10} & =0 . \tag{3.83d}
\end{align*}
$$

This system can be solved either for $\left(p_{01}, q_{01}, f_{01}, g\right)$ or for $\left(p_{10}, q_{10}, f, g_{10}\right)$. In either of these cases, we derive two solutions. The first one is

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{10}=p_{01}, \quad q_{10}=q_{01}, \quad f=g, \quad g_{10}=f_{01}, \tag{3.84}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is trivial and corresponds to $M\left(p, q_{10}, f\right)=M\left(p, q_{01}, g\right)$.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

The second solution is given by

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
p_{01}=\frac{q_{10} p^{2}+\left(g_{10}-f\right) p+p_{10}}{1+p q_{11}}, & q_{01}=\frac{p_{10} q_{11}^{2}+\left(f-g_{10}\right) q_{11}+q_{10}}{1+p q_{11}} \\
f_{01}=\frac{q_{11}\left(p_{10}+p g_{10}\right)+f-p q_{10}}{1+p q_{11}}, & g=\frac{q_{11}\left(p f-p_{10}\right)+g_{10}+p q_{10}}{1+p q_{11}} \tag{3.85b}
\end{array}
$$

The above system has some properties which take their rise in the derivation of the Darboux matrix. In particular, we have the following.

Proposition 3.5.1 System (3.85) admits two first integrals, $\mathcal{F}:=f-p q_{10}$ and $\mathcal{G}:=$ $g-p q_{01}$, and the following conservation law

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) f=(\mathcal{S}-1) g \tag{3.86}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

Relation (3.48) suggests that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1)\left(f-p q_{10}\right)=0 \quad \text { and } \quad(\mathcal{S}-1)\left(g-p q_{01}\right)=0 \tag{3.87}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be verified with straightforward calculation, using equations (3.83a). Thus, $F=f-p q_{10}$ and $G:=g-p q_{01}$ are first integrals. Moreover, equation (3.83a) can be written in the form of the conservation law (3.86).

Corollary 3.5.2 The following relations hold.

$$
\begin{equation*}
f-p q_{10}=\alpha(n) \quad \text { and } \quad g-p q_{01}=\beta(m) \tag{3.88}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 3.5.3 In view of relations (3.88), we can interpret functions $f$ and $g$ as being given on the edges of the quadrilateral where system (3.85) is defined, and, consequently, consider system (3.85) as a vertex-bond system [42].

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

## Initial value problem on the staircase

Our choice to solve system (3.83) for $p_{01}, q_{01}, f_{01}$ and $g$ is motivated by the initial value problem related to system (3.85). Suppose that initial values for $p$ and $q$ are given on the vertices along a staircase as shown in Figure 3.2. Functions $f$ and $g$ are given on the edges of this initial value configuration in a consistent way with the first integrals (3.88). In particular, horizontal edges carry the initial values of $f$ and vertical edges the corresponding ones of $g$.


Figure 3.2: Initial value problem and direction of evolution
With these initial conditions, the values of $p$ and $q$ can be uniquely determined at every vertex of the lattice, while $f$ and $g$ on the corresponding edges. This is obvious from the rational expressions (3.85) defining the evolution above the staircase, cf. Figure 3.2.

For the evolution below the staircase, one has to use

$$
\begin{align*}
& p_{10}=\frac{q_{01} p^{2}+\left(f_{01}-g\right) p+p_{01}}{1+p q_{11}}, \quad q_{10}=\frac{p_{01} q_{11}^{2}+\left(g-f_{01}\right) q_{11}+q_{01}}{1+p q_{11}},  \tag{3.89a}\\
& g_{10}=\frac{q_{11}\left(p_{01}+p f_{01}\right)+g-p q_{01}}{1+p q_{11}}, \quad f=\frac{q_{11}\left(p g-p_{01}\right)+f_{01}+p q_{01}}{1+p q_{11}}, \tag{3.89b}
\end{align*}
$$

which uniquely defines the evolution below the staircase as indicated in Figure 3.2.

Remark 3.5.4 We could consider more general initial value configurations of staircases of lengths $\ell_{1}$ and $\ell_{2}$ in the $n$ and $m$ lattice direction, respectively. Such initial value problems are consistent with evolutions (3.85), (3.89) determining the values of all fields uniquely at every vertex and edge of the lattice.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

## Derivation of an Adler-Yamilov type of system

Now, using first integrals we can reduce system (3.85) to an Adler-Yamilov type of system as those in [10]. Specifically, we have the following.

Proposition 3.5.5 System (3.85) can be reduced to the following non-autonomous AdlerYamilov type of system for $p$ and $q$ :

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=p_{10}-\frac{\alpha(n)-\beta(m)}{1+p q_{11}} p, \quad q_{01}=q_{10}+\frac{\alpha(n)-\beta(m)}{1+p q_{11}} q_{11} . \tag{3.90}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

The proof is straightforward if one uses relations (3.88) to replace $f$ and $g$ in system (3.85).

## Derivation of discrete Toda equation

Now, we will use two different Darboux matrices associated with the NLS equation to construct the discrete Toda equation [82].

In fact, we introduce a discrete Lax pair as (3.81), with $M=M_{1}(p, f)$ in (3.38) and $K=M\left(p, q_{01}, g\right)$ in (3.36). That is, we consider the following system

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Psi_{10}=\left(\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
\frac{1}{p} & 0
\end{array}\right)\right) \Psi  \tag{3.91a}\\
& \Psi_{01}=\left(\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
g & p \\
q_{01} & 1
\end{array}\right)\right) \Psi, \tag{3.91b}
\end{align*}
$$

and impose its compatibility condition.
From the coefficient of the $\lambda$-term in the latter condition we extract the following equations

$$
\begin{align*}
f-f_{01} & =g-g_{10}  \tag{3.92a}\\
p_{01} & =\frac{1}{q_{11}} . \tag{3.92b}
\end{align*}
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Additionally, the $\lambda^{0}$-term of the compatibility condition implies

$$
\begin{align*}
f_{01} g-g_{10} f & =\frac{p_{10}}{p}-p_{01} q_{01},  \tag{3.93a}\\
g_{10}-f_{01} & =\frac{p_{01}}{p},  \tag{3.93b}\\
g-f & =\frac{p_{01}}{p} . \tag{3.93c}
\end{align*}
$$

Now, recall from the previous section that, using (3.88), the quantities $g$ and $g_{10}$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
g=\beta(m)+p q_{01} \quad \text { and } \quad g_{10}=\beta(m)+p_{10} q_{11} . \tag{3.94}
\end{equation*}
$$

We substitute $g$ and $g_{10}$ into (3.93b) and (3.93c), and then replace $p$ and its shifts using (3.92b). Then, we can express $f$ and $f_{01}$ in terms of the potential $q$ and its shifts:

$$
\begin{align*}
f & =\frac{q_{01}}{q_{10}}-\frac{q_{10}}{q_{11}}+\beta(m),  \tag{3.95a}\\
f_{01} & =\frac{q_{11}}{q_{20}}-\frac{q_{10}}{q_{11}}+\beta(m) . \tag{3.95b}
\end{align*}
$$

Proposition 3.5.6 The compatibility of system (3.95) yields a fully discrete Toda type equation.

## Proof

Applying the shift operator $\mathcal{T}$ on both sides of (3.95a) and demanding that its right-hand side agrees with that of (3.95b), we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{q_{11}}{q_{20}}-\frac{q_{02}}{q_{11}}+\frac{q_{11}}{q_{12}}-\frac{q_{10}}{q_{11}}=\beta(m+1)-\beta(m) . \tag{3.96}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we make the transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
q \rightarrow \exp \left(-w_{-1,-1}\right), \tag{3.97}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies the following discrete Toda type equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{w_{1,-1}-w}-e^{w-w_{-1,1}}+e^{w_{0,1}-w}-e^{w-w_{0,-1}}=\beta(m+1)-\beta(m), \tag{3.98}
\end{equation*}
$$

and proves the statement.

Remark 3.5.7 The discrete Toda equation (3.98) can be written in the form of a conservation law,

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{S}-1) e^{w_{0,-1}-w_{-1}}=(\mathcal{T}-1)\left(e^{w_{0,-1}-w_{-10}}-e^{w-w_{0,-1}}+\beta(m)\right) \tag{3.99}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 3.5.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation and related discrete systems

Now we consider the difference Lax pair

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{10}=M\left(p, q_{10}, f ; c_{1}, c_{2}\right) \Psi, \quad \Psi_{01}=M\left(p, q_{01}, g ; 1,1\right) \Psi \tag{3.100}
\end{equation*}
$$

where matrix $M$ is given in (3.54) and at least one of the constants $c_{1}, c_{2}$ is different from zero.

From the consistency condition of this system, we derive the following system of equations.

$$
\begin{align*}
& f g_{10}-g f_{01}=0  \tag{3.101a}\\
& f_{01} q_{11}-f q_{10}-c_{1} g_{10} q_{11}+c_{2} g q_{01}=0  \tag{3.101b}\\
& f_{01} p_{01}-f p-c_{2} g_{10} p_{10}+c_{1} g p=0  \tag{3.101c}\\
& f_{01}-f-c_{1}\left(g_{10}-g\right)-f g_{10} p_{10} q_{10}+g f_{01} p_{01} q_{01}=0 . \tag{3.101d}
\end{align*}
$$

As in the case of the nonlinear Schrödinger equation, we can solve equations (3.101) either for $p_{01}, q_{01}, f_{01}$ and $g$ or for $p_{10}, q_{10}, f$ and $g_{10}$, motivated by the evolution of the intial value problem on the staircase (cf. Figure 3.2).

Specifically, the first branch is the trivial solution given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=\frac{c_{2}}{c_{1}}, \quad q_{01}=\frac{c_{1}}{c_{2}} q_{10}, \quad f_{01}=c_{1} g_{10}, \quad g=\frac{1}{c_{1}} f \tag{3.102}
\end{equation*}
$$

The second branch involves rational expressions of the remaining variables, and it is given

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
by

$$
\begin{align*}
p_{01} & =\frac{A}{f B^{2}}\left(f^{2} p^{2} q_{10}+c_{2} f p\left(g_{10} p_{10} q_{10}-1\right)-c_{2}^{2} g_{10} p_{10}+c_{1} c_{2} g_{10} p\right)  \tag{3.103a}\\
g & =g_{10} \frac{A}{B}  \tag{3.103b}\\
f_{01} & =f \frac{B}{A}  \tag{3.103c}\\
q_{01} & =\frac{B}{g_{10} A^{2}}\left(f\left(q_{11}-q_{10}+g_{10} p_{10} q_{10} q_{11}\right)+c_{1} g_{10} q_{11}\left(g_{10} p_{10} q_{11}-1\right)\right), \tag{3.103d}
\end{align*}
$$

where $A$ and $B$ are given by the following expressions

$$
\begin{equation*}
A:=f p q_{11}+c_{2}\left(g_{10} p_{10} q_{11}-1\right), \quad \text { and } \quad B:=f p q_{10}+c_{1} g_{10} p q_{11}-c_{2} \tag{3.103e}
\end{equation*}
$$

When either $c_{1}$ or $c_{2}$ is equal to 0 , then system (3.101) admits a unique non-trivial solution and it is given by the above expressions if we set $c_{1}$ or $c_{2}$ equal to 0 accordingly.

Now, as in the case of NLS equation, the derivation of the Darboux matrix gives rise to some integrability properties for system (3.101). Specifically, we have the following.

Proposition 3.5.8 System (3.101) admits two first integrals, $\mathcal{F}:=f^{2} p q_{10}-c_{2} f$ and $\mathcal{G}:=g^{2} p q_{01}-g$, and the following conservation law

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) \ln f=(\mathcal{S}-1) \ln g . \tag{3.104}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

Indeed, relation (3.59) suggests that

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1)\left(f^{2} p q_{10}-c_{2} f\right)=0 \quad \text { and } \quad(\mathcal{S}-1)\left(g^{2} p q_{01}-g\right)=0 \tag{3.105}
\end{equation*}
$$

This can be verified with straightforward calculation using equations (3.101). Thus, $F=$ $f-p q_{10}$ and $G:=g-p q_{01}$ are first integrals. Moreover, from equation (3.101a) we get $\ln \left(f g_{10}\right)=\ln \left(g f_{01}\right)$ which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln f_{01}-\ln f=\ln g_{10}-\ln g . \tag{3.106}
\end{equation*}
$$

The latter equation can be written in the form of the conservation law (3.86).

## Derivation of a six-point difference equation

We now use Darboux matrices $M_{\text {deg }}(p)$ and $M\left(p, q_{01}, g ; 1,1\right)$ in (3.60) and (3.54), respectively, to define the following discrete Lax pair

$$
\begin{align*}
& \Psi_{10}=\left(\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 / p & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 1 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right)\right) \Psi,  \tag{3.107a}\\
& \Psi_{01}=\left(\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
g & 0 \\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & g p \\
g q_{01} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)\right) \Psi . \tag{3.107b}
\end{align*}
$$

The compatibility of the above system implies the following equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{10}=\frac{p}{p_{01}} g, \quad g_{10}=\frac{p}{q_{11}} g, \quad \frac{1}{p_{01}}+g q_{01}=g_{10} p_{10}+\frac{1}{p} . \tag{3.108}
\end{equation*}
$$

From the first two of the above equations we conclude that $q_{11}=p_{01}$ and, thus, $q_{10}=p$ and $q_{01}=p_{-1,1}$. Additionally, we use the third equation of (3.108) to express field $g$ in terms of $p$ and its shifts. Then, the first equation of (3.108) can be rewritten as the following six-point difference equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{p_{01}-p}{p_{01}\left(p_{01} p_{-11}-p p_{10}\right)}=\frac{p_{11}-p_{10}}{p_{10}\left(p_{11} p_{01}-p_{10} p_{20}\right)} \tag{3.109}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (3.108) can be solved uniquely for any of the $p$ and its shifts, apart from $p_{10}$ and $p_{01}$. This allows us to define uniquely the evolution of the initial data placed on a double staircase, as it is shown in Figure (3.3)


The stencil where the equation is defined


The initial value problem

Figure 3.3: The stencil of six points and the initial value problem for equation (3.109)
A first integral of equation (3.108) is given by the following.

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Corollary 3.5.9 Equation (3.108) admits a first integral $\mathcal{G}_{p}$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{G}_{p}=\frac{\left(p_{01}-p\right)\left(p_{10}-p_{-11}\right)}{\left(p_{01} p_{-11}-p p_{10}\right)^{2}} . \tag{3.110}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

We express all the fields in $\mathcal{G}$, which is given in proposition 3.5.8, in terms of $p$ and its shifts.

### 3.5.3 A deformation of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation and related discrete systems

Here we employ Darboux matrix (3.70) to introduce the following discrete Lax pair

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Psi_{10}=M\left(p, q_{10}, f, g\right) \Psi, \quad \Psi_{01}=M\left(p, q_{01}, u, v\right) \Psi . \tag{3.111}
\end{equation*}
$$

The compatibility condition of this Lax pair leads to an equation solely for $f$ and $u$, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f_{01} u-u_{10} f=0, \tag{3.112}
\end{equation*}
$$

and a system of equations for the remaining fields, given by

$$
\begin{array}{r}
p\left(p_{01}-p\right)+\left(q_{01}-q_{10}\right) q_{11}+g_{01} v-g v_{10}=0, \\
g_{01}-g+v-v_{10}+p_{01} q_{01}-p_{10} q_{10}=0, \\
p_{01}-p_{10}+g_{01} q_{01}+(v-g) q_{11}-v_{10} q_{10}=0, \\
q_{01}-q_{10}+g_{01} p-g p_{10}+v p_{01}-v_{10} p=0 . \tag{3.113d}
\end{array}
$$

Remark 3.5.10 We shall consider the case where the value of $\Phi_{1}$ in (3.79) is nonzero. In the oposite case, we deduce that $g=p q_{10}$ and similarly $v=p q_{01}$; this is due to the fact that $f$ must be nonzero ( $f=0$ implies $M=0$ ). Then, system (3.113) has only the trivial solution $p_{01}=p_{10}$ and $q_{01}=q_{10}$.

Proposition 3.5.11 Equation (3.112) can be written in the form of the following conservation law

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) \ln \left(g-p q_{10}\right)=(\mathcal{S}-1) \ln \left(v-p q_{01}\right) . \tag{3.114}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

The value of $\Phi_{1}$ can be rescaled to 1 and thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
f^{2}=\frac{1}{g-p q_{10}}, \quad u^{2}=\frac{1}{v-p q_{01}} . \tag{3.115}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we substitute the above back to equation (3.112), and the latter can be written in the form (3.114).

Motivated by the initial value problem on the staircase, system (3.113) can be solved either for $\left(p_{01}, q_{01}, g_{01}, v\right)$ or ( $p_{10}, q_{10}, g, v_{10}$ ). However, we present this the solution in the Appendix because of its length. Some properties of system (3.113) are given in the following.

Proposition 3.5.12 System (3.113) admits two first integrals

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) \frac{g-p q_{10}}{g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}}=0, \quad(\mathcal{S}-1) \frac{v-p q_{01}}{v^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{01}^{2}}=0 \tag{3.116}
\end{equation*}
$$

and a conservation law given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1)(g+p q)=(\mathcal{S}-1)(v+p q) \tag{3.117}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

Eliminating $f$ from $\Phi_{1}$ and $\Phi_{2}$ we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(\frac{g-p q_{10}}{g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}}\right)=0 . \tag{3.118}
\end{equation*}
$$

This suggests that relations (3.116) constitute first integrals for system (3.113) and can be readily shown. Moreover, it is straightforward to show that the first equation of (3.113) can be written in the form (3.117).

In what follows, we use the first integrals (3.116) to reduce system (3.113).

## Derivation of a discrete Toda type equation

Here we consider the case where the first integrals (3.117) have the values

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{g-p q_{10}}{g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}}=0, \quad \text { and } \quad \frac{v-p q_{01}}{v^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{01}^{2}}=\frac{1}{2} \tag{3.119}
\end{equation*}
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems
which implies the following algebraic equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
g-p q_{10}=0, \quad\left(v-1+p-q_{01}\right)\left(v-1-p+q_{01}\right)=0 . \tag{3.120}
\end{equation*}
$$

For the latter we choose the solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
g=p q_{10}, \quad \text { and } \quad v=p-q_{01}+1 \tag{3.121}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substitution of the above expressions into system (3.113) we obtain a system of equations for $p, q$ and their shifts. Motivated by the initial value problem on the staircase as in (3.2), we solve this system either for $p_{01}, q_{01}$ or for $p_{10}, q_{10}$. In particular, we solve for $p_{01}, q_{01}$ and, in order to simplify the retrieved exressions, we make the point transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
(p, q) \mapsto(p-1, q-1) \tag{3.122}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, we come up with

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=\frac{p_{10} q_{10}}{q_{11}}, \quad q_{01}=\frac{(p-2)\left(q_{10}-2\right)}{p_{10} q_{10}-2 q_{11}} q_{11}+2 . \tag{3.123}
\end{equation*}
$$

System (3.123) admits the conservation law

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1)(p-1)\left(q_{10}+q-2\right)=(\mathcal{S}-1)\left((p-1) q-q_{01}\right), \tag{3.124}
\end{equation*}
$$

which results from (3.117) after substitution (3.121) followed by the point transformation (3.122). Moreover, the first equation of (3.123) can be written in the form of a conservation law, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) \ln \left(p q_{10}\right)=(\mathcal{S}-1) \ln (p) . \tag{3.125}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition 3.5.13 System (3.123) implies the following discrete Toda type equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{w_{0,-1}-w}-e^{w-w_{01}}+e^{w_{0,-1}-w_{1,-1}}-e^{w-w_{1,-1}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(e^{w_{-11}-w_{01}}-e^{w_{0,-1}-w_{1,-1}}\right) . \tag{3.126}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Proof

Conservation law (3.125) suggests that we can introduce a new variable, $w$, via the relations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\ln \left(p q_{10}\right)=w_{0,-1}-w_{1,-1}, \quad \ln (p)=w_{0,-1}-w \tag{3.127}
\end{equation*}
$$

and therefore

$$
\begin{equation*}
p=\exp \left(w_{0,-1}-w\right), \quad q=\exp \left(w_{-10}-w_{0,-1}\right) \tag{3.128}
\end{equation*}
$$

It can be readily shown that, applying the above transformation to equations (3.123), the first one is identically satisfied, whereas the second is written in the form (3.126).

Equation (3.126) can be written in a conserved form as

$$
\begin{aligned}
& (\mathcal{T}-1)\left(e^{w_{-10}-w}-e^{w-w_{1,-1}}+2 e^{w_{0,-1}-w}+e^{w_{-10}-w_{0,-1}}+e^{w_{0,-1}-w_{1,-1}}\right)= \\
& (\mathcal{S}-1)\left(e^{w_{-10}-w}-e^{w_{-11}-w}+e^{w_{-} 10}-e^{w_{0,-1}}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Remark 3.5.14 If we choose the solution $g=p q_{10}, v=q_{01}-p+1$ of (3.120) instead of (3.121), and make the point transformation $(p, q) \rightarrow(p+1, q+1)$, we will derive the system

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=\frac{p_{10} q_{10}}{q_{11}}, \quad q_{01}=\frac{(p+2)\left(q_{10}+2\right)}{p_{10} q_{10}+2 q_{11}} q_{11}-2, \tag{3.129}
\end{equation*}
$$

which after a transformation $p \rightarrow \exp \left(w-w_{0,-1}\right), q \rightarrow-\exp \left(w_{0,-1}-w_{-10}\right)$ is written in the form (3.126).

## Derivation of a seven point scalar equation

Let us now choose the following values for the first integrals (3.117)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{g-p q_{10}}{g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}}=-\frac{1}{2}, \quad \text { and } \quad \frac{v-p q_{01}}{v^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{01}^{2}}=\frac{1}{2} \tag{3.130}
\end{equation*}
$$

or, equivalently,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(g+1+p+q_{01}\right)\left(g+1-p-q_{01}\right)=0, \quad\left(v-1+p-q_{01}\right)\left(v-1-p+q_{01}\right)=0 . \tag{3.131}
\end{equation*}
$$

There are obviously four set of solutions for $g$ and $v$, and we choose

$$
\begin{equation*}
g=p+q_{10}-1, \quad \text { and } \quad v=p-q_{01}+1 \tag{3.132}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substitution of the above expressions into system (3.113), and making the point transformation $(p, q) \mapsto(p-1, q-1)$, implies a system of difference equations among the potentials $p$ and $q$ and their shifts. Its solution for $p_{01}$ and $q_{01}$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=p_{10}-q_{11}+2+\frac{q_{10}-2}{p} p_{10}, \quad q_{01}=\frac{p_{10} q_{10}-2 q_{11}}{p_{10}\left(p+q_{10}-2\right)-p q_{11}} p \tag{3.133}
\end{equation*}
$$

Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems

Similarly, using the same substitution and point transformation, conservation laws (3.117) and (3.114) become

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) p q=(\mathcal{S}-1)\left(p q-2 q_{01}\right), \tag{3.134a}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathcal{T}-1) \ln (p-2)\left(q_{10}-2\right)=(\mathcal{S}-1) \ln p\left(q_{01}-2\right), \tag{3.134b}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively, which of course constitute conservation laws for system (3.133).


The two quadrilaterals with one common vertex


The initial value problem

Figure 3.4: The stencil of seven points and the initial value problem on the black and white lattice

Proposition 3.5.15 System (3.133) implies the following seven-point scalar equation

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left(w-w_{10}\right)\left(w_{0,-1}-w_{-10}\right)\left(1+\frac{1}{w-w_{1,-1}}\right) \\
& +\left(w-w_{-10}\right)\left(w_{10}-w_{01}\right)\left(1-\frac{1}{w-w_{-11}}\right)=0 . \tag{3.135}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

Conservation law (3.134a) suggests that we can introduce a potential, $w$, using the following relations:

$$
\begin{equation*}
p q=4\left(w-w_{-10}\right), \quad p q-2 q_{01}=4\left(w_{-11}-w_{-10}\right) \tag{3.136}
\end{equation*}
$$

Expressing $p$ and $q$ in terms of $w$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
p=2 \frac{w-w_{-10}}{w_{0,-1}-w_{-10}}, \quad q=2\left(w_{0,-1}-w_{-10}\right) . \tag{3.137}
\end{equation*}
$$

# Chapter 3. Darboux tranformations for NLS type equations and discrete integrable systems 

Substitution of the above to the first equation of (3.133), implies equation (3.135).

Equation (3.135) involves seven lattice points, and it can be solved uniquely for any of the shifts of $w$, but not for $w$. These points can be placed on the vertices of two quadrilaterals with a common vertex; this allows us to consider an initial value problem where the initial values are placed placed across a double staircase, as in Figure 3.4. Of course, since we can solve uniquely for both $w_{-11}$ and $w_{1,-1}$, the evolution can be uniquely determined in both directions.

## Chapter 4

## Introduction to Yang-Baxter maps

### 4.1 Overview

The original (quantum) Yang-Baxter equation originates in the works of Yang [92] and Baxter [13], and it has a fundamental role in the theory of quantum and classical integrable systems.

In this thesis we are interested in the study of the set-theoretical solutions of the YangBaxter equation. The first examples of such solutions appeared in 1988, in a paper of Sklyanin [81]. However, the study of the set-theoretical solutions was formally proposed by Drinfiel'd in 1992 [32]. Veselov, in [88], proposed the more elegant term "YangBaxter maps" for this type of solutions and, moreover, he connected them with integrable mappings [88, 89].

Yang-Baxter maps have been of great interest by many researchers in the area of Mathematical Physics. They are related to several concepts of integrability as, for instance, the multidimensionally consistent equations [8, 9, 15, 68, 69, 72]. Especially, for those Yang-Baxter maps which admit Lax representation [83], there are corresponding hierarchies of commuting transfer maps which preserve the spectrum of their monodromy matrix $[88,89]$.

In this chapter we give an introduction to the theory of Yang-Baxter maps.

In particular, this chapter is organised as follows: In the next section we briefly give an introduction to the Yang-Baxter equation and Yang-Baxter maps. We shall restrict our attention to the Yang-Baxter maps admitting Lax-representation which we study in the next chapters of this thesis. In section 3 we discuss the connection between 3D consistent equations and Yang-Baxter maps, while section 4 deals with their classification. Finally, section 5 is devoted to the transfer dynamics of Yang-Baxter maps and initial values problems on a two-dimensional lattice.

### 4.2 The quantum Yang-Baxter equation

Let $V$ be a vector space and $Y \in \operatorname{End}(V \otimes V)$ a linear operator. The Yang-Baxter equation is given by the following

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y^{12} \circ Y^{13} \circ Y^{23}=Y^{23} \circ Y^{13} \circ Y^{12} \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $Y^{i j}, i, j=1,2,3, i \neq j$, denotes the action of $Y$ on the $i j$ factor of the triple tensor product $V \otimes V \otimes V$. In this form, equation (4.1) is known in the literature as the quantum $Y B$ equation.

### 4.2.1 Parametric Yang-Baxter maps

Let us now replace the vector space $V$ by a set $A$, and the tensor product $V \otimes V$ by the Cartesian product $A \times A$. In what follows, we shall consider $A$ to be a finite dimensional algebraic variety in $K^{N}$, where $K$ is any field of zero characteristic, such as $\mathbb{C}$ or $\mathbb{Q}$.

Now, let $Y \in \operatorname{End}(A \times A)$ be a map defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y:(x, y) \mapsto(u(x, y), v(x, y)) . \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, we define the maps $Y^{i j} \in \operatorname{End}(A \times A \times A)$ for $i, j=1,2,3, i \neq j$, which appear in equation (4.1), by the following relations

$$
\begin{align*}
& Y^{12}(x, y, z)=(u(x, y), v(x, y), z),  \tag{4.3a}\\
& Y^{13}(x, y, z)=(u(x, z), y, v(x, z)),  \tag{4.3b}\\
& Y^{23}(x, y, z)=(x, u(y, z), v(y, z)) . \tag{4.3c}
\end{align*}
$$

Let also $Y^{21}=\pi Y \pi$, where $\pi \in \operatorname{End}(A \times A)$ is the permutation map: $\pi(x, y)=(y, x)$.
Map $Y$ is a YB map, if it satisfies the YB equation (4.1). Moreover, it is called reversible if the composition of $Y^{21}$ and $Y$ is the identity map, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y^{21} \circ Y=I d \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, let us consider the case where parameters are involved in the definition of the YB map. In particular we define the following map

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{a, b}:(x, y) \mapsto(u, v) \equiv(u(x, y ; a, b), v(x, y ; a, b)) . \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

This map is called parametric YB map if it satisfies the parametric YB equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{a, b}^{12} \circ Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{b, c}^{23}=Y_{b, c}^{23} \circ Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{a, b}^{12} . \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

One way to represent the map $Y_{a, b}$ is to consider the values $x$ and $y$ taken on the sides of the quadrilateral as in figure 4.1-(a); the map $Y_{a, b}$ maps the values $x$ and $y$ to the values placed on the opposite sides of the quadrilateral, $u$ and $v$.

Moreover, for the YB equation, we consider the values $x, y$ and $z$ taken on the sides of the cube as in figure 4.1-(b). Specifically, by the definition 4.3 of the functions $Y^{i j}$, the map $Y_{b, c}^{23}$ maps

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y, z) \xrightarrow[\rightarrow]{Y_{b, c}^{23}}\left(x, y^{(1)}, z^{(1)}\right), \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

using the right face of the cube. Then, map $Y_{a, c}^{13}$ maps

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x, y^{(1)}, z^{(1)}\right) \xrightarrow{Y_{a, c}^{13}}\left(x^{(1)}, y^{(1)}, z^{(2)}\right) \equiv Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{b, c}^{23}(x, y, z), \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

using the front face of the cube. Finally, map $Y_{a, b}^{12}$ maps

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x^{(1)}, y^{(1)}, z^{(2)}\right) \xrightarrow{Y_{a, b}^{12}}\left(x^{(2)}, y^{(2)}, z^{(2)}\right) \equiv Y_{a, b}^{12} \circ Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{b, c}^{23}(x, y, z), \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

using the top face of the cube.
On the other hand, using the bottom, the back and the left face of the cube, the values $x$, $y$ and $z$ are mapped to the values $\hat{x}^{(2)}, \hat{y}^{(2)}$ and $\hat{z}^{(2)}$ via the map $Y_{b, c}^{23} \circ Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{a, b}^{12}$ which consists with the right hand side of equation, namely (4.2)

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{b, c}^{23} \circ Y_{a, c}^{13} \circ Y_{a, b}^{12}(x, y, z)=\left(\hat{x}^{(2)}, \hat{y}^{(2)}, \hat{z}^{(2)}\right) . \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, the map $Y_{a, b}$ satisfies the YB equation (4.6) if and only if $x^{(2)}=\hat{x}^{(2)}, y^{(2)}=$ $\hat{y}^{(2)}$ and $z^{(2)}=\hat{z}^{(2)}$.


Figure 4.1: Cubic representation of (a) the parametric YB map and (b) the corresponding YB equation.

Most of the examples of YB maps which appear in this thesis are parametric.

Example 4.2.1 One of the most famous parametric YB maps is Adler's map [5]

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y) \xrightarrow{Y_{a, b}}(u, v)=\left(y-\frac{a-b}{x+y}, x+\frac{a-b}{x+y}\right) \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is related to the 3-D consistent discrete potential KDV equation [67, 74].

### 4.2.2 Matrix refactorisation problems and the Lax equation

Let us consider the matrix $L$ depending on a variable $x$, a parameter $c$ and a spectral parameter $\lambda$, namely $L=L(x ; c, \lambda)$, such that the following matrix refactorisation problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u ; a, \lambda) L(v ; b, \lambda)=L(y ; b, \lambda) L(x ; a, \lambda), \quad \text { for any } \lambda \in \mathbb{C}, \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

is satisfied whenever $(u, v)=Y_{a, b}(x, y)$. Then, $L$ is called Lax matrix for $Y_{a, b}$, and (4.12) is called the Lax-equation or Lax-representation for $Y_{a, b}$.

Note 4.2.2 In the rest of this thesis we use the letter " $L$ " when referring to Lax matrices of the refactorisation problem (4.12) and the calligraphic " $\mathcal{L}$ " for Lax operators. Moreover, for simplicity of the notation, we usually omit the dependence on the spectral parameter, namely $L(x ; a, \lambda) \equiv L(x ; a)$.

Since the Lax equation (4.12) does not always have a unique solution for $(u, v)$, Kouloukas and Papageorgiou in [53] proposed the term strong Lax matrix for a YB map. This is when the Lax equation is equivalent to a map

$$
(u, v)=Y_{a, b}(x, y) .
$$

The uniqueness of refactorisation (4.12) is a sufficient condition for the solutions of the Lax equation to define a reversible YB map [89] of the form (4.13). In particular, we have the following.

Proposition 4.2.3 (Veselov) Let $u=u(x, y), v=v(x, y)$ and $L=L(x ; \alpha)$ a matrix such that the refactorisation (4.12) is unique. Then, the map defined by (4.13) satisfies the Yang-Baxter equation and it is reversible.

## Proof

Due to the associativity of matrix multiplication and equation (4.12), we have

$$
\begin{gather*}
L(z ; c) L(y ; b) L(x ; a)=L\left(y^{(1)} ; b\right) L\left(z^{(1)} ; c\right) L(x ; a)= \\
L\left(y^{(1)} ; b\right) L\left(x^{(1)} ; a\right) L\left(z^{(2)} ; c\right)=L\left(x^{(2)} ; a\right) L\left(y^{(2)} ; b\right) L\left(z^{(2)} ; c\right) . \tag{4.14}
\end{gather*}
$$

On the other hand

$$
\begin{gather*}
L(z ; c) L(y ; b) L(x ; a)=L(z ; c) L\left(\hat{x}^{(1)} ; a\right) L\left(\hat{y}^{(1)} ; b\right)= \\
L\left(\hat{x}^{(2)} ; a\right) L\left(\hat{z}^{(1)} ; c\right) L\left(\hat{y}^{(1)} ; b\right)=L\left(\hat{x}^{(2)} ; a\right) L\left(\hat{y}^{(2)} ; b\right) L\left(\hat{z}^{(2)} ; c\right) . \tag{4.15}
\end{gather*}
$$

From the relations (4.14) and (4.15) follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L\left(x^{(2)} ; a\right) L\left(y^{(2)} ; b\right) L\left(z^{(2)} ; c\right)=L\left(\hat{x}^{(2)} ; a\right) L\left(\hat{y}^{(2)} ; b\right) L\left(\hat{z}^{(2)} ; c\right) . \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the refactorisation (4.12) is unique, the above equation implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{(2)}=\hat{x}^{(2)}, \quad y^{(2)}=\hat{y}^{(2)}, \quad \text { and } \quad z^{(2)}=\hat{z}^{(2)}, \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the Yang-Baxter equation.
For the reversibility, we need to show that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\pi Y \pi Y(x, y)=(x, y) \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

or equivalently that

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
x=v(v(x, y), u(x, y))  \tag{4.19}\\
y=u(v(x, y), u(x, y))
\end{array}\right.
$$

Now, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u(x, y) ; a) L(v(x, y), b)=L(y ; b) L(x ; a), \quad \text { for any } x, y \in A \tag{4.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

For $x=v(x, y)$ and $y=u(x, y)$ we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u(x, y) ; a) L(v(x, y) ; b)=L(u(v(x, y), u(x, y)) ; b) L(v(v(x, y), u(x, y)), a) \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have swapped $a$ with $b$. Since, the refactorisation is unique, (4.20) and (4.21) imply (4.19).

In the case where the map (4.13) admits Lax representation (4.12), but it is not equivalent to (4.12), one may need to check the YB property separately. Yet, we can use the following trifactorisation criterion.

Corollary 4.2.4 (Kouloukas-Papageorgiou) Let $u=u(x, y)$ and $v=v(x, y)$ and $L=$ $L(x ; \alpha)$ a matrix such that $L(u ; a) L(v ; b)=L(y ; b) L(x ; a)$. If equation (4.16) implies the relation (4.17), then the map defined by (4.13) is a Yang-Baxter map.

In this thesis we are interested in those YB maps whose Lax representation involves matrices with rational dependence on the spectral parameter, as the following.

Example 4.2.5 In terms of Lax matrices, Adler's map (4.11) has the following strong Lax representation [83, 89]

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u ; a, \lambda) L(v ; b, \lambda)=L(y ; b, \lambda) L(x ; a, \lambda), \quad \text { for any } \lambda \in \mathbb{C}, \tag{4.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
L(x ; a, \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
x & 1  \tag{4.23}\\
x^{2}-a & x
\end{array}\right)-\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
0 & 0 \\
1 & 0
\end{array}\right) .
$$

### 4.3 Yang-Baxter maps and 3D consistent equations

From the representation of the YB equation on the cube, as in Fig. 4.1-(b), it is clear that the YB equation is essentially the same with the 3D consistency condition with the fields lying on the edges of the cube. Therefore, one would expect that we can derive YB maps from equations having the 3D consistency property.

The connection between YB maps and the multidimensional consistency condition for equations on quad graphs originates in the paper of Adler, Bobenko and Suris in 2003 [8]. However, a more systematic approach was presented in the paper of Papageorgiou, Tongas and Veselov [77] a couple of years later and it is based on the symmetry analysis of equations on quad-graphs. In particular, the YB variables constitute invariants of their symmetry groups.

We present the example of the discrete potential $\operatorname{KdV}(\mathrm{dpKdV})$ equation $[74,67]$ which was considered in [77].

Example 4.3.1 The dpKdV equation is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(f_{11}-f\right)\left(f_{10}-f_{01}\right)-a+b=0, \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the fields are placed on the vertices of the square as in figure (4.2). We consider the values on the edges to be the difference of the values on the vertices, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=f_{10}-f, \quad y=f_{11}-f_{10}, \quad u=f_{11}-f_{01} \quad \text { and } \quad v=f_{01}-f, \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in figure (4.2). This choice of the variables is motivated by the fact that the dpKdV equation is invariant under the translation $f \rightarrow f+$ const. Now, the invariants (4.25) satisfy the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
x+y=u+v . \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the equation (4.24) can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x+y)(x-v)=a-b . \tag{4.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Solving (4.26) and (4.27), we obtain the Adler's map (4.11).


Figure 4.2: (a) dpKdV equation: fields placed on vertices (b) Adler's map: fields placed on the edges.

Example 4.3.2 For the dpKdV equation, let us now consider a different combination for the variables assigned on the edges of the square, namely

$$
\begin{equation*}
x=f f_{10}, \quad y=f_{10} f_{11}, \quad u=f_{01} f_{11}, \quad \text { and } \quad v=f f_{01} . \tag{4.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

This choice is motivated by the fact that equation (4.24) is invariant under the change $f \rightarrow \epsilon f, f_{11} \rightarrow \epsilon f_{11}, f_{10} \rightarrow \epsilon^{-1} f_{10}$ and $f_{01} \rightarrow \epsilon^{-1} f_{01}$.

Now, the above variables satisfy the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
x u=y v . \tag{4.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, we have that

$$
\begin{equation*}
y-x=f_{10}\left(f_{11}-f\right), \quad u-v=f_{01}\left(f_{11}-f\right), \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and, therefore, the dpKdV equation can be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
y-x-(u-v)-a+b=0 . \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

Solving (4.29) and (4.31) for $u$ and $v$ we obtain the following map

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y) \longrightarrow(u, v) \equiv\left(y\left(1+\frac{a-b}{x-y}\right), x\left(1+\frac{a-b}{x-y}\right)\right), \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a parametric YB map.

### 4.4 Classification of quadrirational YB maps: The $H$-list

All the quadrirational maps in the $F$-list presented in the first chapter satisfy the YB equation. However, in principle, their Möbius-equivalent maps do not necessarily have the YB property, as in the following.

Example 4.4.1 Consider the map $F_{V}$ of the $F$-list. Under the change of variables

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y, u, v) \rightarrow(-x,-y, u, v), \tag{4.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

it becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
(x, y) \rightarrow\left(-y-\frac{a-b}{x-y},-x-\frac{a-b}{x-y}\right) . \tag{4.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above map does not satisfy the YB equation.

In fact, all the maps of the $F$-list lose the YB property under the transformation (4.33).
The quadrirational maps which satisfy the YB equation were classified in [75]. Particularly, their classification is based on the following.

Definition 4.4.2 Let $\rho_{\lambda}: X \rightarrow X$ be a $\lambda$-parametric family of bijections. The parametric YB maps $Y_{a, b}$ and $\tilde{Y}_{a, b}$ are called equivalent, if they are related as follows

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{Y}_{a, b}=\rho_{a}^{-1} \times \rho_{b}^{-1} Y_{a, b} \rho_{a} \times \rho_{b} . \tag{4.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 4.4.3 It is straightforward to show that the above equivalence relation is well defined; if $Y_{a, b}$ has the YB property, so does the map $\tilde{Y}_{a, b}$.

The representative elements of the equivalence classes, with respect to the equivalence relation (4.35), are given by the following list.

Theorem 4.4.4 Every quadrirational parametric $Y B$ map is equivalent (in the sense (4.35)) to one of the maps of the F-list or one of the maps of the following list

$$
\begin{align*}
& u=y Q^{-1}, \quad v=x Q, \quad Q=\frac{(1-b) x y+(b-a) y+b(a-1)}{(1-a) x y+(a-b) x+a(b-1)} ;  \tag{I}\\
& u=y Q^{-1}, \quad v=x Q, \quad Q=\frac{a+(b-a) y-b x y}{b+(a-b) x-a x y} ;  \tag{II}\\
& u=\frac{y}{a} Q, \quad v=\frac{x}{b} Q, \quad Q=\frac{a x+b y}{x+y} ;  \tag{III}\\
& u=y Q^{-1} \quad v=x Q, \quad Q=\frac{a x y+1}{b x y+1} ;  \tag{IV}\\
& u=y-P, \quad v=x+P, \quad P=\frac{a-b}{x+y} . \tag{V}
\end{align*}
$$

We refer to the above list as the $H$-list. Note that, the map $H_{V}$ is the Adler's map (4.11).

### 4.5 Transfer dynamics of YB maps and initial value problems

It is well known that, given a Yang-Baxter map, there is a hierarchy of commuting transfer maps, which arise out of the consideration of initial value problems. The connection between the set-theoretical solutions of the YB equation and integrable mappings was first introduced by Veselov in [88, 89]. In particular he showed that for those YB maps which admit Lax representation, there is a hierarchy of commuting transfer maps which preserve the spectrum of their monodromy matrix.

In this section we present the transfer maps, which arise out of the consideration of the initial value problem on the staircase, as they were defined in [52]. Specifically, in [52] they considered YB maps, which admit a Lax pair representation, $(L, M)$, namely YB maps which can be represented as

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u ; a, \lambda) M(v ; b, \lambda)=M(y ; b, \lambda) L(x ; a, \lambda) . \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

These maps are the so-called entwining YB maps.
However, in this section we shall restrict ourselves to the case when $L \equiv M$. Therefore, we present the transfer maps defined in [52] in the particular case when they admit Lax representation (4.12).

For a given a parametric YB map $Y_{a, b}$, we can consider a periodic initial value problem on the staircase as in [74,52]. Motivated by the fact that the YB map can be represented as a map mapping two successive edges of the quadrilateral to the opposite ones (as in figure 4.1-(a)), we shall place the initial values on the edges of the staircase. In particular, let $x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}$ and $y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}$ be initial values assigned to the edges of the staircase with periodic boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{n+1}=x_{1} \quad \text { and } \quad y_{n+1}=y_{1}, \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in Figure 4.3. The edges with values $x_{i}$ and $y_{i}, i=1, \ldots, n$, carry the parameters $a$ and $b$ respectively.

The YB map $Y_{a, b}$ maps the values $\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$ to $\left(x_{i}^{(1)}, y_{i}^{(1)}\right)=Y_{a, b}\left(x_{i}, y_{i}\right)$. Then, the values on the several levels of the lattice will be given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(x_{i}^{(k)}, y_{j}^{(k)}\right)=Y_{a, b}\left(x_{i}^{(k-1)}, y_{j}^{(k-1)}\right), \quad j=i+k-1 \quad \bmod n \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, for the $n$-periodic problem in Figure 4.3 we define the transfer map

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{n}:\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots, x_{n}, y_{1}, y_{2}, \ldots, y_{n}\right) \mapsto\left(x_{1}^{(1)}, x_{2}^{(1)}, \ldots, x_{n}^{(1)}, y_{2}^{(1)}, \ldots, y_{n}^{(1)}, y_{1}^{(1)}\right) \tag{4.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

which maps the initial values $x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}$ and $y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}$ to the next level of the staircase. Note that $T_{1}^{1} \equiv Y_{a, b}$. Moreover, we define the $k$-transfer map
$T_{n}^{k}:\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}, y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}\right) \mapsto\left(x_{1}^{(k)}, \ldots, x_{n}^{(k)}, y_{r+1}^{(k)}, \ldots, y_{n}^{(k)}, y_{1}^{(k)}, \ldots, y_{r}^{(k)}\right), \quad T_{n}^{1} \equiv T_{n}$,
where $r=k \bmod n$.


Figure 4.3: Transfer maps corresponding to the $n$-periodic initial value problem

For the transfer map $T_{n}$ we define the monodromy matrix

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; \lambda)=\prod_{j=1}^{\widehat{n}} L\left(\mathbf{y}_{j} ; b\right) L\left(\mathbf{x}_{j} ; a\right) \tag{4.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{x}:=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right), \mathbf{y}:=\left(y_{1}, \ldots, y_{n}\right)$ and the " $\curvearrowleft$ " indicates that the terms of the above product are placed from the right to the left. Similarly to [88], in [52] was proven that the transfer map $T_{n}$ preserves the spectrum of its monodromy matrix. Therefore, the function $\operatorname{tr}(\mathcal{M}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; \lambda))$ is a generating function of invariants for the map $T_{n}$.

As we will see in the next chapter, the invariants of a map are essential for integrability claims.

Example 4.5.1 For Adler's map (4.11) we consider the transfer matrix of the twoperiodic initial value problem, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
T_{2}\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, y_{1}, y_{2}\right)=\left(y_{1}-\frac{a-b}{x_{1}+y_{1}}, y_{2}-\frac{a-b}{x_{2}+y_{2}}, x_{2}+\frac{a-b}{x_{2}+y_{2}}, x_{1}+\frac{a-b}{x_{1}+y_{1}}\right) . \tag{4.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the corresponding monodromy matrix is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{M}_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; \lambda)=L\left(y_{2} ; b\right) L\left(x_{2} ; a\right) L\left(y_{1} ; b\right) L\left(x_{1} ; a\right) \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathbf{x}:=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right)$ and $\mathbf{y}:=\left(y_{1}, y_{2}\right)$.
The trace of the monodromy matrix is given by the following second order polynomial

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{tr}\left(\mathcal{M}_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; \lambda)\right)=2 \lambda^{2}-\left(I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})\right)^{2} \lambda-I_{0}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) \tag{4.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $I_{0}$ and $I_{1}$ are invariants of the map $T_{2}$, and they are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=a f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})+b f(\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{x})-\prod_{k, l=1}^{2}\left(x_{k}+y_{l}\right),  \tag{4.45a}\\
& I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{1}+x_{2}+y_{1}+y_{2}, \tag{4.45b}
\end{align*}
$$

where we have omitted the constant terms, and $f$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{1}^{2}+x_{2}^{2}+2 y_{1} y_{2}+\left(x_{1}+x_{2}\right)\left(y_{1}+y_{2}\right) . \tag{4.45c}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Chapter 5

## Yang-Baxter maps related to NLS type equations

### 5.1 Overview

As explained in the previous chapter, the construction of Yang-Baxter maps which admit Lax representation and the study of their integrability is important, as they are related to several concepts of integrability.

The aim of this chapter is to construct Yang-Baxter maps using the Darboux matrices we presented in chapter 3, and study their integrability. Particularly, we are interested in the Liouville integrability of these maps, as finite dimensional maps. We shall present six and four-dimensional YB maps corresponding to all the NLS type equations which we considered in chapter 3 .

The chapter is organised as follows: In the following section we give the definitions of a Poisson manifold, the Poisson bracket and Casimir functions that we use in the later sections, for the convenience of the reader. However, for more information on Poisson geometry one could refer to [12, 61]. Moreover, we shall prove some basic consequences of the matrix refactorisation problems; the birationality of the deduced YB maps and the derivation of their invariants. Finally, we will give the definition of the complete integrability of a YB map.

In section 3 we construct six-dimensional YB maps for the all the NLS type equations which we considered in chapter 3. Furthermore, in the cases of the NLS and the DNLS equations the six-dimensional maps can be restricted to four-dimensional YB maps on invariant leaves. These maps deserve our attention, as they are related to several aspects of integrability; they are integrable in the Liouville sense as finite dimensional maps, they can be used to construct integrable lattices and they also have applications to a recent theory of maps preserving functions with symmetries [35].

Finally, section 4 deals with the vector generalisations of the four-dimensional YB maps. However, the Liouville integrability of these generalisations is an open problem.

The results of this chapter appear in [49].

### 5.2 Preliminaries

In what follows, we consider $M$ to be a differentiable manifold with $\operatorname{dim}(M)=n$, and $\mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M)$ the space of smooth functions defined on $M$.

### 5.2.1 Poisson manifolds and Casimir functions

Let us start with the definition of the Poisson bracket.

Definition 5.2.1 A map $\{\}:, \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M) \times \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M) \rightarrow \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M)$ is called Poisson bracket, if it possesses the following properties:

1. $\{\alpha f+\beta g, h\}=\alpha\{f, h\}+\beta\{g, h\} ; \quad$ (bilinear)
2. $\{f, g\}=-\{g, f\} ; \quad$ (antisymmetric)
3. $\{\{f, g\}, h\}+\{\{h, f\}, g\}+\{\{g, h\}, f\}=0 ; \quad$ (Jacobi identity)
4. $\{f, g h\}=\{f, g\} h+\{f, h\} g ; \quad$ (Leibnitz rule)
for any $f, g, h \in \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M)$ and $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{C}$. Moreover, the manifold $M$ equipped with the above Poisson bracket is called Poisson manifold, and it is denoted as $(M,\{\}$,$) .$

Yet, the above definition is abstract and, in practice, the Poisson bracket is usually defined by the following map

$$
\begin{equation*}
(f, g) \xrightarrow{J}\{f, g\}=\nabla f \cdot J \cdot(\nabla g)^{t} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $J$ is an antisymmetric matrix which satisfies the Jacobi identity and it is called the Poisson matrix. It can be readily verified that the above relation defines a Poisson bracket. Specifically, we have the following.

Proposition 5.2.2 Let $J=J(\boldsymbol{x}), \boldsymbol{x} \in M$, an $n \times n$ matrix. Then, $J$ defines a Poisson bracket via the relation (5.1) iff it is antisymmetric and it satisfies the following

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i=1}^{n}\left(J_{i j} \partial_{x_{i}} J_{k l}+J_{i l} \partial_{x_{i}} J_{j k}+J_{i k} \partial_{x_{i}} J_{l j}\right)=0, \quad j, k, l=1, \ldots, n, \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $x=\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{n}\right) \in M$.

Corollary 5.2.3 Any constant antisymmetric matrix defines a Poisson bracket via the relation (5.1).

Now, for any two smooth functions on $M$, we have the following.

Definition 5.2.4 The functions $f, g \in \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M)$ are said to be in involution with respect to a Poisson bracket (5.1) if $\{f, g\}=0$.

Definition 5.2.5 A function $C=C(\boldsymbol{x}) \in \mathcal{C}^{\infty}(M)$ is called Casimir function if it is in involution with any arbitrary function with respect to the Poisson bracket, namely $\{C, f\}=0$, for any $f=f(\boldsymbol{x}) \in M$.

### 5.2.2 Properties of the YB maps which admit Lax representation

Since the Lax equation, (4.12), has the obvious symmetry

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, v, a, b) \longleftrightarrow(y, x, b, a) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have the following.

Proposition 5.2.6 If a matrix refactorisation problem (4.12) yields a rational map (4.13), then this map is birational.

## Proof

Let $Y:(x, y) \mapsto(u, v)$ be a rational map corresponding to a refactorisation problem (4.12), i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
x \mapsto u=\frac{n_{1}(x, y ; a, b)}{d_{1}(x, y ; a, b)}, \quad y \mapsto v=\frac{n_{2}(x, y ; a, b)}{d_{2}(x, y ; a, b)}, \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $n_{i}, d_{i}, i=1,2$, are polynomial functions of their variables.
Due to the symmetry (5.3) of the refactorisation problem (4.12), the inverse map of $Y$, $Y^{-1}:(x, y) \mapsto(u, v)$, is also rational and, in fact,

$$
\begin{equation*}
u \mapsto x=\frac{n_{1}(v, u ; b, a)}{d_{1}(v, u ; b, a)}, \quad v \mapsto y=\frac{n_{2}(v, u ; b, a)}{d_{2}(v, u ; b, a)} . \tag{5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, $Y$ is a birational map.

Now, for a Yang-Baxter map, $Y_{a, b}$, the quantity $M(x, y ; a, b)=L(y ; b) L(x ; a)$ is called the monodromy matrix. The fact that the monodromy matrix is a generating function of first integrals is well known from the eighties; for example, see [33] ${ }^{1}$. In particular, for the invariants of a YB map admiting Lax representation, we have the following.

Proposition 5.2.7 If $L=L(x, a ; \lambda)$ is a Lax matrix with corresponding YB map, $Y$ : $(x, y) \mapsto(u, v)$, then the $\operatorname{tr}(L(y, b ; \lambda) L(x, a ; \lambda))$ is a generating function of invariants of the YB map.

## Proof

Since,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{tr}(L(u, a ; \lambda) L(v, b ; \lambda)) \stackrel{(4.12)}{=} \operatorname{tr}(L(y, b ; \lambda) L(x, a ; \lambda))=\operatorname{tr}(L(x, a ; \lambda) L(y, b ; \lambda)), \tag{5.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the function $\operatorname{tr}(L(x, a ; \lambda) L(y, b ; \lambda))$ can be written as $\operatorname{tr}(L(x, a ; \lambda) L(y, b ; \lambda))=$ $\sum_{k} \lambda^{k} I_{k}(x, y ; a, b)$, from (5.6) follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{i}(u, v ; a, b)=I_{i}(x, y ; a, b), \tag{5.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^8]which are invariants for $Y$.

Nevertheless, the above proposition does not guarantee that the generated invariants, $I_{i}(x, y ; a, b)$, are functionally independent. Moreover, the number of the invariants we deduce from the trace of the monodromy matrix may not be enough for integrability claims.

### 5.2.3 Liouville integrability of Yang-Baxter maps

The invariants of a YB map are essential towards its integrability in the Liouville sense. Here, we define the complete (Liouville) integrability of a YB map, following [34, 87]. Particularly, we have the following.

Definition 5.2.1 A $2 N$-dimensional Yang-Baxter map,

$$
Y:\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{2 N}\right) \mapsto\left(u_{1}, \ldots, u_{2 N}\right), \quad u_{i}=u_{i}\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{2 N}\right), \quad i=1, \ldots, 2 N
$$

is said to be completely integrable or Liouville integrable if

1. there is a Poisson matrix, $J_{i j}=\left\{x_{i}, x_{j}\right\}$, of rank $2 r$, which is invariant under the action of the YB map, namely $J_{i j}$ and $\tilde{J}_{i j}=\left\{u_{i}, u_{j}\right\}$ have the same functional form of their respective arguments,
2. map $Y$ has $r$ functionally independent invariants, $I_{i}$, namely $I_{i} \circ Y=I_{i}$, which are in involution with respect to the corresponding Poisson bracket, i.e. $\left\{I_{i}, I_{j}\right\}=0$, $i, j=1, \ldots, r, i \neq j$,
3. there are $k=2 N-2 r$ Casimir functions, namely functions $C_{i}, i=1, \ldots, k$, such that $\left\{C_{i}, f\right\}=0$, for any arbitrary function $f=f\left(x_{1}, \ldots, x_{2 N}\right)$. These are invariant under $Y$, namely $C_{i} \circ Y=C_{i}$.

We will use this definition to study the integrability of the YB maps presented in the following section.

### 5.3 Derivation of Yang-Baxter maps

In chapter 3 we used Darboux transformations to construct integrable systems of discrete equations, which have the multidimensional consistency property. The compatibility condition of Darboux transformations around the square is exactly the same with the Lax equation (4.12). Therefore, in this section, we use Darboux transformations to construct YB maps.

In particular, we consider Darboux matrices for the NLS type equations studied in chapter 3; the NLS equation, the DNLS equation and a deformation of the DNLS equation. For these Darboux matrices the refactorisation is not unique. Therefore, for the corresponding six-dimensional YB maps which are derived from the refactorisation problem, in principle, one needs to check the YB property separately. Yet, the entries of these Darboux matrices obey certain differential equations which possess first integrals.

There is a natural restriction of the Darboux map on the affine variety corresponding to a level set of these first integrals. These restrictions make the refactorisation unique and this guarantees that the induced four-dimensional YB maps satisfy the YB equation and they are reversible [89]. Moreover, we will show that the latter YB maps have Poisson structure.

However, the first integrals are not always very useful for the reduction because, in general, they are polynomial equations. In particular, in the cases of NLS and DNLS equations we present six-dimensional YB maps and their four-dimensional restrictions on invariant leaves. These four-dimensional restrictions are birational YB maps and we prove that they are integrable in the Liouville sense. In the case of the deformation of the DNLS equation, we present a six-dimensional YB map and a linear approximation to the four-dimensional YB map.

We start with the well known example of the Darboux transformation for the nonlinear Schrödinger equation and construct its associated YB map.

### 5.3.1 The Nonlinear Schrödinger equation

Recall that, in the case of NLS equation, the Lax operator is given by

$$
\mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda)=D_{x}+\lambda U_{1}+U_{0}, \quad \text { where } \quad U_{1}=\sigma_{3}, \quad U_{0}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p  \tag{5.8}\\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\sigma_{3}$ is the standard Pauli matrix, i.e. $\sigma_{3}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1)$.
Moreover, a Darboux matrix for $\mathcal{L}$ is given by

$$
M=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0  \tag{5.9}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
f & p \\
q_{10} & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

The entries of (5.9) must satisfy the following system of equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x} f=2\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right), \quad \partial_{x} p=2\left(p f-p_{10}\right), \quad \partial_{x} q_{10}=2\left(q-q_{10} f\right), \tag{5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

which admits the following first integral

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f-p q_{10}\right)=0 \tag{5.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

This integral implies that $\partial_{x} \operatorname{det} M=0$.
In correspondence with (5.9), we define the matrix

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0  \tag{5.12}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
X & x_{1} \\
x_{2} & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right),
$$

and substitute it into the Lax equation (4.12)

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\mathbf{u} ; \lambda) M(\mathbf{v} ; \lambda)=M(\mathbf{y} ; \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda) \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

to derive the following system of equations

$$
\begin{gathered}
v_{1}=x_{1}, u_{2}=y_{2}, U+V=X+Y, u_{2} v_{1}=x_{1} y_{2} \\
u_{1}+U v_{1}=y_{1}+x_{1} Y, u_{1} v_{2}+U V=x_{2} y_{1}+X Y, v_{2}+u_{2} V=x_{2}+X y_{2} .
\end{gathered}
$$

The corresponding algebraic variety is a union of two six-dimensional components. The first one is obvious from the refactorisation problem (5.13), and it corresponds to the permutation map

$$
\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{y}, \quad \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{x},
$$

which is a (trivial) YB map. The second one can be represented as a rational sixdimensional non-involutive map of $K^{3} \times K^{3} \rightarrow K^{3} \times K^{3}$

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
x_{1} \mapsto u_{1}=\frac{y_{1}+x_{1}^{2} x_{2}-x_{1} X+x_{1} Y}{1+x_{1} y_{2}}, & y_{1} \mapsto v_{1}=x_{1}, \\
x_{2} \mapsto u_{2}=y_{2}, & y_{2} \mapsto v_{2}=\frac{x_{2}+y_{1} y_{2}^{2}+y_{2} X-y_{2} Y}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} \\
X \mapsto U=\frac{y_{1} y_{2}-x_{1} x_{2}+X+x_{1} y_{2} Y}{1+x_{1} y_{2}}, & Y \mapsto V=\frac{x_{1} x_{2}-y_{1} y_{2}+x_{1} y_{2} X+Y}{1+x_{1} y_{2}}, \tag{5.14c}
\end{array}
$$

which, one can easily check that, satisfies the YB equation.
The trace of $M(\mathbf{y} ; \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)$ is a polynomial in $\lambda$ whose coefficients are

$$
\operatorname{tr}(M(\mathbf{y} ; \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda))=\lambda^{2}+\lambda I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})+I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X+Y \quad \text { and } \quad I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{2} y_{1}+x_{1} y_{2}+X Y \tag{5.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

and those, according to proposition 5.2.7, are invariants for the YB map (5.14).
In the following section we show that the YB map (5.14) can be restricted to a fourdimensional YB map which has Poisson structure.

## Restriction on symplectic leaves: The Adler-Yamilov map

In this section, we show that map (5.14) can be restricted to the Adler-Yamilov map on symplectic leaves, by taking into account the first integral, (5.11), of the system (5.10). In particular, we have the following.

Proposition 5.3.1 For the six-dimensional map (5.14) we have the following:

1. The quantities $\Phi=X-x_{1} x_{2}$ and $\Psi=Y-y_{1} y_{2}$ are its invariants (first integrals).
2. It can be restricted to a four-dimensional map $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$, where $A_{a}, A_{b}$ are level sets of the first integrals $\Phi$ and $\Psi$, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
A_{a} & =\left\{\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right) \in K^{3} ; X=a+x_{1} x_{2}\right\},  \tag{5.16a}\\
A_{b} & =\left\{\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, Y\right) \in K^{3} ; Y=b+y_{1} y_{2}\right\} . \tag{5.16b}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, map $Y_{a, b}$ is the Adler-Yamilov map.

## Proof

1. It can be readily verified that (5.14) implies $U-u_{1} u_{2}=X-x_{1} x_{2}$ and $V-v_{1} v_{2}=$ $Y-y_{1} y_{2}$. Thus, $\Phi$ and $\Psi$ are invariants, i.e. first integrals of the map.
2. The existence of the restriction is obvious. Using the conditions $X=x_{1} x_{2}+a$ and $Y=y_{1} y_{2}+b$, one can eliminate $X$ and $Y$ from (5.14). The resulting map, $\mathbf{x} \rightarrow \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), \mathbf{y} \rightarrow \mathbf{v}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$, is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) \xrightarrow{Y_{a, b}}\left(y_{1}-\frac{a-b}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} x_{1}, y_{2}, x_{1}, x_{2}+\frac{a-b}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} y_{2}\right) . \tag{5.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Map (5.17) coincides with the Adler-Yamilov map.

Map (5.17) originally appeared in the work of Adler and Yamilov [10]. Moreover, it appears as a YB map in [51, 76].

Now, one can use the condition $X=x_{1} x_{2}+a$ to eliminate $X$ from the Lax matrix (5.12), i.e.

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)=\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0  \tag{5.18}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
a+x_{1} x_{2} & x_{1} \\
x_{2} & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}\right) .
$$

The form of Lax matrix (5.18) coincides with the well known Darboux transformation for the NLS equation (see [80] and references therein). Now, Adler-Yamilov map follows from the strong Lax representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\mathbf{u} ; a, \lambda) M(\mathbf{v} ; b, \lambda)=M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda) \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, the Adler-Yamilov map (5.17) is a reversible parametric YB map with strong Lax matrix (5.18). Moreover, it is easy to verify that it is not involutive.

For the integrability of this map we have the following

Proposition 5.3.2 The Adler-Yamilov map (5.17) is completely integrable.

## Proof

From the trace of $M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)$ we obtain the following invariants for the map (5.17)

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{1} x_{2}+y_{1} y_{2}+a+b  \tag{5.20}\\
& I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}\right)\left(b+y_{1} y_{2}\right)+x_{1} y_{2}+x_{2} y_{1}+1 \tag{5.21}
\end{align*}
$$

The constant terms in $I_{1}, I_{2}$ can be omitted. It is easy to check that $I_{1}, I_{2}$ are in involution with respect to a Poisson bracket defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{x_{1}, x_{2}\right\}=\left\{y_{1}, y_{2}\right\}=1, \quad \text { and all the rest } \quad\left\{x_{i}, y_{j}\right\}=0 \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the corresponding Poisson matrix is invariant under the YB map (5.17). Therefore the map (5.17) is completely integrable.

The above proposition implies the following.

Corollary 5.3.3 The invariant leaves $A_{a}$ and $B_{b}$, given in (5.16), are symplectic.

### 5.3.2 Derivative NLS equation: $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction

Recall that the Lax operator for the DNLS equation $[18,47]$ is given by

$$
\mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda)=D_{x}+\lambda^{2} U_{2}+\lambda U_{1}, \quad \text { where } \quad U_{2}=\sigma_{3}, \quad U_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p  \tag{5.23}\\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

and $\sigma_{3}$ is a Pauli matrix. The operator $\mathcal{L}$ is invariant with respect to the following

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{3} \mathcal{L}(-\lambda) \sigma_{3}, \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathcal{L}(\lambda) \equiv \mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda)$. In particular, the involution (5.24) generates the so-called reduction group $[64,59]$ and it is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$.

The Darboux matrix in this case is given by

$$
M:=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
f & 0  \tag{5.25}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & f p \\
f q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{ll}
c & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

whose entries $p, q_{10}$ and $f$ obey the following system of equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} p & =2 p\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)-\frac{2}{f}\left(p_{10}-c p\right),  \tag{5.26a}\\
\partial_{x} q_{10} & =2 q_{10}\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right)-\frac{2}{f}\left(c q_{10}-q\right),  \tag{5.26b}\\
\partial_{x} f & =2 f\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right) . \tag{5.26c}
\end{align*}
$$

The system (5.26a)-(5.26c) has a first integral which obliges the determinant of matrix (5.25) to be $x$-independent, and it is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f^{2} p q_{10}-f\right)=0 . \tag{5.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the entries of (5.25) as variables, namely $\left(p, q_{10}, f ; c\right) \rightarrow\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X ; 1\right)$, we define the matrix

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
X & 0  \tag{5.28}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & x_{1} X \\
x_{2} X & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right) .
$$

The Lax equation implies the following equations

$$
\begin{gather*}
u_{1} U+v_{1} V=x_{1} X+y_{1} Y, \quad u_{2} U+v_{2} V=x_{2} X+y_{2} Y, \\
U V=X Y, \quad v_{1} U V=x_{1} X Y, \quad u_{2} U V=y_{2} X Y, \quad u_{2} v_{1} U V=x_{1} y_{2} X Y,  \tag{5.29}\\
U+V+u_{1} v_{2} U V=X+Y+x_{2} y_{1} X Y .
\end{gather*}
$$

As in the case of nonlinear Schrödinger equation, the algebraic variety consists of two components. The first six-dimensional component corresponds to the permutation map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{y}, \quad \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{x}, \tag{5.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the second corresponds to the following six-dimensional YB map

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{1} \mapsto u_{1} & =f_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), & & y_{1} \mapsto v_{1}=f_{2}(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x}), \\
x_{2} \mapsto u_{2} & =f_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), & & y_{2} \mapsto v_{2}=f_{1}(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x}),  \tag{5.31}\\
X \mapsto U & =f_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), & & Y \mapsto V=f_{3}(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x}),
\end{align*}
$$

where $\pi$ is the permutation function, $\pi\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right)=\left(x_{2}, x_{1}, X\right), \pi^{2}=1$ and $f_{1}, f_{2}$ and $f_{3}$ are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\frac{-1}{f_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})} \frac{x_{1} X+\left(y_{1}-x_{1}\right) Y-x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} X Y-x_{1}^{2} x_{2} X^{2}}{x_{1} x_{2} X+x_{1} y_{2} Y-1}  \tag{5.32a}\\
& f_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=y_{2}  \tag{5.32b}\\
& f_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\frac{x_{1} x_{2} X+x_{1} y_{2} Y-1}{x_{1} y_{2} X+y_{1} y_{2} Y-1} X . \tag{5.32c}
\end{align*}
$$

One can verify that the above map is a non-involutive YB map. The invariants of this map are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X Y \quad \text { and } \quad I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=(\mathbf{x} \cdot \pi \mathbf{y}) X Y+X+Y \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

The map $Y: K^{3} \times K^{3} \rightarrow K^{3} \times K^{3}$, given by $\{(5.31),(5.32 a)-(5.32 c)\}$, can be restricted to a map of the Cartesian product of two two-dimensional affine varieties

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{a}=\left\{\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right) \in K^{3} ; X-X^{2} x_{1} x_{2}=a \in K\right\}  \tag{5.34a}\\
& A_{b}=\left\{\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, Y\right) \in K^{3} ; Y-Y^{2} y_{1} y_{2}=b \in K\right\} \tag{5.34b}
\end{align*}
$$

which are invariant varieties of the map $Y$. Thus, the YB map, $Y_{a, b}$, is a birational map $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \rightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$.

It is easy to uniformise the rational variety $A_{a}$ and express the YB map explicitly. The equations defining the varieties $A_{a}$ and $A_{b}$ are linear in $x_{1}, x_{2}$ and $y_{1}, y_{2}$, respectively. Hence, we can express

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{2}=\frac{1}{x_{1} X}-\frac{a}{x_{1} X^{2}}, \quad y_{2}=\frac{1}{y_{1} Y}-\frac{b}{y_{1} Y^{2}} . \tag{5.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

The resulting map is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1} \mapsto u_{1}=\frac{h_{1}}{h_{2}} y_{1}, \quad X \mapsto U=h_{2} Y, \quad y_{1} \mapsto v_{1}=x_{1}, \quad Y \mapsto V=\frac{1}{h_{2}} X \tag{5.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the quantities $h_{i}, i=1,2$, are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{1}=\frac{a y_{1} Y+x_{1} X(a-Y)}{a y_{1} Y+x_{1} X(b-Y)}, \quad h_{2}=\frac{a y_{1} Y+x_{1} X(b-Y)}{b y_{1} Y+x_{1} X(b-X)} . \tag{5.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

Nevertheless, in the next section, we present a more symmetric way to parametrise the varieties $A_{a}, A_{b}$ and the Lax matrix.

## $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction: A reducible six-dimensional YB map

Now, let us go back to the Darboux matrix (5.25) and replace $\left(f p, f q_{10}, f ; c\right) \rightarrow$ $\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X ; 1\right)$, namely

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
X & 0  \tag{5.38}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & x_{1} \\
x_{2} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right)
$$

From the Lax equation we obtain the following equations

$$
\begin{gathered}
u_{2} v_{1}=x_{1} y_{2}, \quad u_{2} V=X y_{2}, \quad U v_{1}=x_{1} Y, \quad U V=X Y \\
u_{1}+v_{1}=x_{1}+y_{1}, \quad U+u_{1} v_{2}+V=X+x_{2} y_{1}+Y, \quad u_{2}+v_{2}=x_{2}+y_{2} .
\end{gathered}
$$

Now, the first six-dimensional component of the algebraic variety corresponds to the trivial map (5.30) and the second component corresponds to a map of the form (5.31), with $f_{1}, f_{2}$ and $f_{3}$ now given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& f_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\frac{\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right) X-x_{1} Y-x_{1} x_{2}\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)}{X-x_{1}\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right)},  \tag{5.39a}\\
& f_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\frac{X-x_{1}\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right)}{Y-y_{2}\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)} y_{2},  \tag{5.39b}\\
& f_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\frac{X-x_{1}\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right)}{Y-y_{2}\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)} Y . \tag{5.39c}
\end{align*}
$$

This map has the following invariants

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X Y, & I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\mathbf{x} \cdot \pi \mathbf{y}+X+Y \\
I_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{1}+y_{1}, & I_{4}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{2}+y_{2} \tag{5.40b}
\end{array}
$$

## Restriction on invariant leaves

In this section, we show that the map given by (5.31) and (5.39a)-(5.39c) can be restricted to a completely integrable four-dimensional map on invariant leaves. As in the previous section, the idea of this restriction is motivated by the existence of the first integral of the system (5.26a)-(5.26c),

$$
\begin{equation*}
f-(f p)\left(f q_{10}\right)=k=\text { constant } \tag{5.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Particularly, we have the following.

Proposition 5.3.4 For the six-dimensional map $\{(5.31),(5.39 a)-(5.39 c)\}$ we have the following:

1. The quantities $\Phi=X-x_{1} x_{2}$ and $\Psi=Y-y_{1} y_{2}$ are its first integrals.
2. It can be restricted to a four-dimensional map $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$, given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\boldsymbol{x}, \boldsymbol{y}) \xrightarrow{Y_{a, b}}\left(y_{1}+\frac{a-b}{a-x_{1} y_{2}} x_{1}, \frac{a-x_{1} y_{2}}{b-x_{1} y_{2}} y_{2}, \frac{b-x_{1} y_{2}}{a-x_{1} y_{2}} x_{1}, x_{2}+\frac{b-a}{b-x_{1} y_{2}} y_{2}\right), \tag{5.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

and $A_{a}, A_{b}$ are given by (5.16).

## Proof

1. Map $\{(5.31),(5.39 a)-(5.39 c)\}$ implies $U-u_{1} u_{2}=X-x_{1} x_{2}$ and $V-v_{1} v_{2}=$ $Y-y_{1} y_{2}$. Therefore, $\Phi$ and $\Psi$ are first integrals of the map.
2. The conditions $X=x_{1} x_{2}+a$ and $Y=y_{1} y_{2}+b$ define the level sets, $A_{a}$ and $A_{b}$, of $\Phi$ and $\Psi$, respectively. Using these conditions, we can eliminate $X$ and $Y$ from map $\{(5.31),(5.39 a)-(5.39 c)\}$. The resulting map, $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$, is given by (5.42).

Now, using condition $X=x_{1} x_{2}+a$, matrix (5.38) takes the following form

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; k ; \lambda)=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
k+x_{1} x_{2} & 0  \tag{5.43}\\
0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & x_{1} \\
x_{2} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Now, map (5.42) follows from the strong Lax representation (5.19). Therefore, it is reversible parametric YB map. It can also be verified that it is not involutive.

For the integrability of map (5.42) we have the following

Proposition 5.3.5 Map (5.42) is completely integrable.

## Proof

The invariants of map (5.42) which we retrieve from the trace of $M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)$ are

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}\right)\left(b+y_{1} y_{2}\right), \quad I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right)+a+b \tag{5.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

However, the quantities $x_{1}+y_{1}$ and $x_{2}+y_{2}$ in $I_{2}$ are invariants themselves. The Poisson bracket in this case is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{x_{1}, x_{2}\right\}=\left\{y_{1}, y_{2}\right\}=\left\{x_{2}, y_{1}\right\}=\left\{y_{2}, x_{1}\right\}=1, \quad \text { and all the rest } \quad\left\{x_{i}, y_{j}\right\}=0 . \tag{5.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

The rank of the Poisson matrix is $2, I_{1}$ is one invariant and $I_{2}=C_{1} C_{2}+a+b$, where $C_{1}=x_{1}+y_{1}$ and $C_{2}=x_{2}+y_{2}$ are Casimir functions. The latter are preserved by (5.42), namely $C_{i} \circ Y_{a, b}=C_{i}, i=1,2$. Therefore, map (5.42) is completely integrable.

Corollary 5.3.6 Map (5.42) can be expressed as a map of two variables on the symplectic leaf

$$
\begin{equation*}
x_{1}+y_{1}=c_{1}, \quad x_{2}+y_{2}=c_{2} \tag{5.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.3.3 A deformation of the DNLS equation: Dihedral Group

Recall that, in the case of the deformation of the DNLS equation, the Lax operator is given by

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda)=D_{x}+\lambda^{2} U_{2}+\lambda U_{1}+\lambda^{-1} U_{-1}-\lambda^{-2} U_{-2}, \quad \text { where } \\
U_{2} \equiv U_{-2}=\sigma_{3}, \quad U_{1}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & 2 p \\
2 q & 0
\end{array}\right), \quad U_{-1}=\sigma_{1} U_{1} \sigma_{1}, \tag{5.47}
\end{array}
$$

and $\sigma_{1}, \sigma_{3}$ are Pauli matrices. Here, the reduction group consists of the following set of transformations acting on the Lax operator (5.47),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{3} \mathcal{L}(-\lambda) \sigma_{3} \quad \text { and } \quad \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \sigma_{1} \mathcal{L}\left(\lambda^{-1}\right) \sigma_{1}, \tag{5.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

and it is isomorphic to $\mathbb{Z}_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2} \cong D_{2}$, [59].

In this case, the Darboux matrix is given by

$$
M=f\left(\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda^{2} & 0  \tag{5.49}\\
0 & \lambda^{-2}
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & p \\
q_{10} & 0
\end{array}\right)+g\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)+\frac{1}{\lambda}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & q_{10} \\
p & 0
\end{array}\right)\right)
$$

where its entries obey the following equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\partial_{x} p & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) p+\left(p-p_{10}\right) g+q-q_{10}\right)  \tag{5.50a}\\
\partial_{x} q_{10} & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) q_{10}+p-p_{10}+\left(q-q_{10}\right) g\right)  \tag{5.50b}\\
\partial_{x} g & =2\left(\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) g+\left(p-p_{10}\right) p+\left(q-q_{10}\right) q_{10}\right),  \tag{5.50c}\\
\partial_{x} f & =-2\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q\right) f . \tag{5.50d}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover, the above system of differential equations admits two first integrals, $\partial_{x} \Phi_{i}=0$, $i=1,2$, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Phi_{1}:=f^{2}\left(g-p q_{10}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad \Phi_{2}:=f^{2}\left(g^{2}+1-p^{2}-q_{10}^{2}\right) . \tag{5.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the next section we construct a six-dimensional map from (5.49).

## Dihedral group: A six-dimensional YB map

We consider the matrix $N:=f M$, where $M$ is given by (5.49), and we change $\left(p, q_{10}, f^{2}\right) \rightarrow\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, X\right)$. Then,

$$
N(\mathbf{x}, X ; \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda^{2} X+x_{1} x_{2} X+1 & \lambda x_{1} X+\lambda^{-1} x_{2} X  \tag{5.52}\\
\lambda x_{2} X+\lambda^{-1} x_{1} X & \lambda^{-2} X+x_{1} x_{2} X+1
\end{array}\right)
$$

where we have substituted the product $f^{2} g$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f^{2} g=1+x_{1} x_{2} X \tag{5.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

using the first integral, $\Phi_{1}$, in (5.51), and having rescaled $c_{1} \rightarrow 1$.
The Lax equation for the Darboux matrix (5.52) reads

$$
\begin{equation*}
N(\mathbf{u} ; \lambda) N(\mathbf{v} ; \lambda)=N(\mathbf{y} ; \lambda) N(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda), \tag{5.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

from where we obtain an algebraic system of equations, omitted because of its length.
The first six-dimensional component of the corresponding algebraic variety corresponds to the trivial YB map

$$
\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{y}, \quad \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{x}, \quad X \mapsto U=Y, \quad Y \mapsto V=X,
$$

and the second component corresponds to the following map

$$
\begin{array}{rlrl}
x_{1} \mapsto u_{1}=\frac{f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})}{g(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})}, & & y_{1} \mapsto v_{1}=x_{1}, \\
x_{2} \mapsto u_{2} & =y_{2}, & & y_{2} \mapsto v_{2}=\frac{f(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x})}{g(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x})},  \tag{5.55}\\
X & \mapsto U=\frac{g(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})}{h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})}, & & Y \mapsto V=\frac{g(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x})}{h(\pi \mathbf{y}, \pi \mathbf{x})},
\end{array}
$$

where $f, g$ and $h$ are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=x_{1} X+\left[x_{2}-y_{2}+2 x_{1} x_{2} y_{1}+x_{1}^{2}\left(y_{2}-3 x_{2}\right)\right] X Y+ \\
& \quad\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left[y_{1}\left(1+x_{1}^{2}\right)-x_{1}\left(1+y_{1}^{2}\right)\right] X Y^{2}-\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}-x_{2}\right) X^{2}- \\
& \quad\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left[x_{2}^{2}\left(3 x_{1}-y_{1}\right)-x_{1}-y_{1}+2 y_{2}\left(y_{1} y_{2}-x_{1} x_{2}\right)\right] X^{2} Y-  \tag{5.56a}\\
& \quad\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left[y_{2}\left(y_{1}^{2}-1\right)+x_{2}\left(y_{1}^{2}-2 x_{1} y_{1}+1\right)\right] X^{2} Y^{2}+ \\
& y_{1}\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)^{2}\left(x_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right) X^{3} Y^{2}+\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)^{2}\left(x_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}-x_{2}\right) X^{3} Y+ \\
& \quad\left(y_{1}-x_{1}\right) Y, \\
& g(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X+2 y_{2}\left(y_{1}-x_{1}\right) X Y+\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left(x_{1}-y_{1}\right)^{2} X Y^{2}+ \\
& \quad 2\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(1-x_{2} y_{2}\right) X^{2} Y+2 x_{2}\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left(x_{1}-y_{1}\right) X^{2} Y^{2}+  \tag{5.56b}\\
& \quad\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)^{2}\left(x_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right) X^{3} Y^{2}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
& h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=1-2 x_{1}\left(y_{2}-x_{2}\right) X-2\left(x_{1} y_{1}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right) X Y+ \\
& \quad\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(x_{2}-y_{2}\right)^{2} X^{2}-2 y_{1}\left(x_{2}-y_{2}\right)\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right) X^{2} Y+  \tag{5.56c}\\
& \quad\left(x_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left(y_{2}^{2}-1\right)^{2} X^{2} Y^{2} .
\end{align*}
$$

It can be verified that this is a YB map. From $\operatorname{tr}(N(\mathbf{x}, X ; \lambda) N(\mathbf{y}, Y ; \lambda))$ we extract the following invariants for the above map

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X Y  \tag{5.57a}\\
& I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X+Y+\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right) X Y,  \tag{5.57b}\\
& I_{3}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=2 x_{1} x_{2} X+2 y_{1} y_{2} Y+2\left(\mathbf{x} \cdot \mathbf{y}+x_{1} x_{2} y_{1} y_{2}\right) X Y+2 . \tag{5.57c}
\end{align*}
$$

### 5.3.4 Dihedral group: A linearised YB map

In the cases of the NLS and DNLS equations we were able to derive six-dimensional maps and, using their invariants, reduce them to four-dimensional YB maps. The matrix refactorisation (4.12) for matrix (5.49) is not unique and it is difficult to deduce a sixdimensional YB map in this case. Therefore, even though we can reuniformise equations (5.51), we can not use them to derive a four-dimensional map. Yet, we can find a linear approximation to the former.

In particular, let us replace $\left(f q_{10}, f p\right) \rightarrow\left(\epsilon x_{1}, \epsilon x_{2}\right)$ in the Darboux matrix (5.49) and linearise the corresponding map around $\epsilon=0$.

It follows from $\Phi_{1}=\frac{1-k^{2}}{4}$ and $\Phi_{2}=\frac{1+k^{2}}{2}$ that the quantities $f$ and $f g$ are given by

$$
f=\frac{1+k}{2}+\mathcal{O}(\epsilon) \quad \text { and } \quad f g=\frac{1-k}{2}+\mathcal{O}(\epsilon)
$$

and, therefore, the Lax matrix by

$$
M=\frac{1+k}{2}\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda^{2} & 0 \\
0 & \lambda^{-2}
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & \lambda x_{1}+\lambda^{-1} x_{2} \\
\lambda x_{2}+\lambda^{-1} x_{1} & 0
\end{array}\right)+\frac{1-k}{2}\left(\begin{array}{ll}
1 & 0 \\
0 & 1
\end{array}\right)+\mathcal{O}(\epsilon)
$$

The linear approximation to the YB map is given by

$$
\left(\begin{array}{l}
x_{1}  \tag{5.58}\\
x_{2} \\
y_{1} \\
y_{2}
\end{array}\right) \xrightarrow{U_{0}}\left(\begin{array}{l}
u_{1} \\
u_{2} \\
v_{1} \\
v_{2}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{cc|cc}
\frac{(a-1)(a-b)}{(a+1)(a+b)} & \frac{a-b}{a+b} & \frac{2 a}{a+b} & \frac{(a+1)(b-a)}{(b+1)(a+b)} \\
0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{a+1}{b+1} \\
\hline \frac{b+1}{a+1} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\
\frac{(a-b)(b+1)}{(a+1)(a+b)} & \frac{2 b}{a+b} & \frac{b-a}{a+b} & \frac{(b-1)(b-a)}{(b+1)(a+b)}
\end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{l}
x_{1} \\
x_{2} \\
y_{1} \\
y_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

which is a linear parametric YB map and it is not involutive.

## 5.4 $2 N \times 2 N$-dimensional YB maps

In this section, we consider the vector generalisations of the YB maps (5.17) and (5.42). We replace the variables, $x_{1}$ and $x_{2}$, in the Lax matrices with $N$-vectors $\mathbf{w}_{1}$ and $\mathbf{w}_{2}^{T}$ to obtain $2 N \times 2 N$ YB maps.

In what follows we use the following notation for a $n$-vector $\mathbf{w}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n}\right)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{w}=\left(\mathbf{w}_{1}, \mathbf{w}_{2}\right), \quad \text { where } \quad \mathbf{w}_{1}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{N}\right), \quad \mathbf{w}_{2}=\left(w_{N+1}, \ldots, w_{2 N}\right) \tag{5.59}
\end{equation*}
$$

and also

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle u_{i}\right|:=\mathbf{u}_{i}, \quad\left|w_{i}\right\rangle:=\mathbf{w}_{i}^{T} \quad \text { and their dot product with } \quad\left\langle u_{i}, w_{i}\right\rangle . \tag{5.60}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 5.4.1 NLS equation

Replacing the variables in (5.18) with $N$-vectors, namely

$$
M(\mathbf{w} ; a, \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda+a+\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle & \left\langle w_{1}\right|  \tag{5.61}\\
\left|w_{2}\right\rangle & I
\end{array}\right)
$$

we obtain a unique solution of the Lax equation given by the following $2 N \times 2 N$ map

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle u_{1}\right|=\left\langle y_{1}\right|+f(z ; a, b)\left\langle x_{1}\right|,  \tag{5.62a}\\
\left\langle u_{2}\right|=\left\langle y_{2}\right|
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle v_{1}\right|=\left\langle x_{1}\right|  \tag{5.62b}\\
\left\langle v_{2}\right|=\left\langle x_{2}\right|+f(z ; b, a)\left\langle y_{2}\right|,
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $f$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(z ; b, a)=\frac{b-a}{1+z}, \quad z:=\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle . \tag{5.62c}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above is a non-involutive parametric $2 N \times 2 N$ YB map with strong Lax matrix given by (5.61). As a YB map it appears in [76], but it is originally introduced by Adler [6]. Moreover, one can construct the above $2 N \times 2 N$ map for the $N \times N$ Darboux matrix (5.61) by taking the limit of the solution of the refactorisation problem in [53].

Two invariants of this map are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; a, b)=\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle  \tag{5.63a}\\
& I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; a, b)=b\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+a\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{2}, y_{1}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle . \tag{5.63b}
\end{align*}
$$

These are the invariants which are obtained from the trace of $M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)$ and they are not enough to claim Liouville integrability.

### 5.4.2 $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction

In the case of $Z_{2}$ we consider, instead of (5.43), the following matrix

$$
M(\mathbf{w} ; a, \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\lambda^{2}\left(a+\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle\right) & \lambda\left\langle w_{1}\right|  \tag{5.64}\\
\lambda\left|w_{2}\right\rangle & I
\end{array}\right)
$$

we obtain a unique solution for the Lax equation given by the following $2 N \times 2 N$ map

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle u_{1}\right|=\left\langle y_{1}\right|+f(z ; a, b)\left\langle x_{1}\right|,  \tag{5.65a}\\
\left\langle u_{2}\right|=g(z ; a, b)\left\langle y_{2}\right|,
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle v_{1}\right|=g(z ; b, a)\left\langle x_{1}\right|,  \tag{5.65b}\\
\left\langle v_{2}\right|=\left\langle x_{2}\right|+f(z ; b, a)\left\langle y_{2}\right|
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $f$ and $g$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(z ; a, b)=\frac{a-b}{a-z}, \quad g(z ; a, b)=\frac{a-z}{b-z}, \quad z:=\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle . \tag{5.65c}
\end{equation*}
$$

The above map is a non-involutive parametric $2 N \times 2 N$ YB map with strong Lax matrix given by (5.64).

It follows from the trace of $M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)$, that two invariants for (5.65a)-(5.65b) are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; a, b)=b\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+a\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle  \tag{5.66a}\\
& I_{2}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y} ; a, b)=\left\langle x_{1}+y_{1}, x_{2}+y_{2}\right\rangle \tag{5.66b}
\end{align*}
$$

In fact, both vectors of the inner product in $I_{2}$ are invariants.
However, as in the case of the NLS vector generalisation, the invariants are not enough to claim Liouville integrability.

## Chapter 6

## Extensions on Grassmann algebras

### 6.1 Overview

Noncommutative extensions of integrable equations have been of great interest since late seventies; for instance, in [19] the supersymmetric Liouville and sine-Gordon equations were studied, while in [54] hierarchies of the KdV equation were associated to super Lie algebras. Other examples include the NLS, the DNLS and KP equations etc. Indicatively, we refer to [11, 29, 30, 73].

In this chapter, motivated by [38], we are interested in the Grassmann extensions of some of the Darboux matrices and their associated YB maps presented in the previous chapters. Specifically, we shall present noncommutative extensions of the Darboux matrices in the cases of the NLS equation and the DNLS equation, together with the noncommutative extensions of the associated YB maps. In fact, we will use the Darboux matrices to construct ten-dimensional YB maps which can be restricted to eight-dimensional YB maps on invariant leaves.

The chapter is organised as follows: In the next section we present the basic facts and properties of Grassmann algebras which we will need in the following sections. Section 3 deals with the noncommutative extensions of the Darboux matrices of NLS type equations and, particularly, the Grassmann extension of the Darboux matrix in the cases of the NLS equation [38] and the DNLS equation. Section 4 is devoted to the construction
of ten-dimensional YB maps and their eight-dimensional restrictions on invariant leaves corresponding to first integrals of the former. These YB maps constitute noncommutative extensions of the YB maps presented in chapter 5. Finally, in section 5 we present vector generalisations of these YB maps.

### 6.2 Elements of Grassmann algebras

In this section, we briefly present the basic properties of Grassmann algebras that we will need in the rest of this chapter. However, one could consult [14] for further details.

Let $G$ be a $\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-graded algebra over $\mathbb{C}$ or, in general, a field $K$ of characteristic zero. Thus, $G$ as a linear space is a direct sum $G=G_{0} \oplus G_{1}(\bmod 2)$, such that $G_{i} G_{j} \subseteq G_{i+j}$. Those elements of $G$ that belong either to $G_{0}$ or to $G_{1}$ are called homogeneous, the ones from $G_{0}$ are called even (Bosonic), while those in $G_{1}$ are called odd (Fermionic).

By definition, the parity $|a|$ of an even homogeneous element $a$ is 0 and it is 1 for odd homogeneous elements. The parity of the product $|a b|$ of two homogeneous elements is a sum of their parities: $|a b|=|a|+|b|$. Grassmann commutativity means that $b a=$ $(-1)^{|a||b|} a b$ for any homogeneous elements $a$ and $b$. In particular, $a_{1}^{2}=0$, for all $a_{1} \in G_{1}$ and even elements commute with all the elements of $G$.

Remark 6.2.1 In the rest of this chapter we shall be using Latin letters for (commutative) even elements of Lax operators or entries of Darboux matrices, and Greek letters when referring to the (noncommutative) odd ones (even though Greeks are not odd!). Moreover, for the sake of consistency with the rest of the thesis we shall continue using the greek letter $\lambda$ when referring to the spectral parameter, despite the fact that $\lambda$ is a commutative element.

### 6.2.1 Supertrace and superdeterminant

Let $M$ be a square matrix of the following form

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
P & \Pi  \tag{6.1}\\
\Lambda & L
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $P$ and $L$ are square matrices of even variables, whereas $\Pi$ and $\Lambda$ are matrices of odd variables, not necessarily square.

We define the supertrace of $M$-and we will denote it by $\operatorname{str}(M)$ - to be the following quantity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{str}(M)=\operatorname{tr}(P)-\operatorname{tr}(L), \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\operatorname{tr}($.$) is the usual trace of a matrix.$
Moreover, we define the superdeterminant of $M$-and we will denote it by $\operatorname{sdet}(M)$ - to be

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{sdet}(M) & =\operatorname{det}\left(P-\Pi L^{-1} \Lambda\right) \operatorname{det}\left(L^{-1}\right)=  \tag{6.3a}\\
& =\operatorname{det}\left(P^{-1}\right) \operatorname{det}\left(L-\Lambda P^{-1} \Pi\right), \tag{6.3b}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\operatorname{det}($.$) is the usual determinant of a matrix.$
The simplest properties of the supertrace and the superdeterminant, for two matrices $A$ and $B$ of the form (6.1), are the following

1. $\operatorname{str}(\mathrm{AB})=\operatorname{str}(\mathrm{BA})$,
2. $\operatorname{sdet}(A B)=s \operatorname{det}(A) \operatorname{sdet}(B)$.

### 6.2.2 Differentiation rule for odd variables

The (left) derivative of a product of odd elements, say $\alpha_{i_{1}}, \ldots, \alpha_{i_{k}}$, obeys the following rule

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial \alpha_{i}}\left(\alpha_{i_{1}} \cdot \ldots \cdot \alpha_{i_{k}}\right)=\quad & \delta_{i i_{1}} \alpha_{i_{2}} \alpha_{i_{3}} \cdot \ldots \cdot \alpha_{i_{k}}- \\
& \delta_{i i_{2}} \alpha_{i_{1}} \alpha_{i_{3}} \cdot \ldots \cdot \alpha_{i_{k}}+\delta_{i i_{3}} \alpha_{i_{1}} \alpha_{i_{2}} \cdot \ldots \cdot \alpha_{i_{k}}-\ldots \tag{6.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $\delta_{i j}$ is the Kronecker operator. For example, if $\alpha$ and $\beta$ are odd variables, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial \alpha}(\alpha \beta)=\beta, \quad \text { but } \quad \frac{\partial}{\partial \beta}(\alpha \beta)=-\alpha . \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 6.2.3 Properties of the Lax equation

Let $L=L(x, \chi ; a)$ be a Lax matrix where $x$ is an even variable, $\chi$ is an odd variable and $a$ a parameter. Since the Lax equation,

$$
\begin{equation*}
L(u, \xi ; a) L(v, \eta ; b)=L(y, \psi ; b) L(x, \chi ; a) \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

has the obvious symmetry

$$
\begin{equation*}
(u, \xi, v, \eta, a, b) \longleftrightarrow(y, \psi, x, \chi, b, a) \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

we have the following

Proposition 6.2.2 If a matrix refactorisation problem (6.6) yields a rational map $(x, \chi, y, \psi)=Y_{a, b}(u, \xi, v, \eta)$, then this map is birational.

## Proof

Let $Y:(x, \chi, y, \psi) \mapsto(u, \xi, v, \eta)$ be a rational map corresponding to a refactorisation problem (4.12), i.e.

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
x \mapsto u=\frac{n_{1}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}{d_{1}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}, & y \mapsto v=\frac{n_{2}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}{d_{2}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}, \\
\chi \mapsto \xi=\frac{n_{3}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}{d_{3}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}, & \psi \mapsto \eta=\frac{n_{4}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}{d_{4}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)}, \tag{6.8b}
\end{array}
$$

where $n_{i}, d_{i}, i=1,2,3,4$, are polynomial functions of their variables.
Due to the symmetry (6.7) of the refactorisation problem (6.6), the inverse map of $Y$, $Y^{-1}:(x, \chi, y, \psi) \mapsto(u, \xi, v, \eta)$, is also rational and, in fact,

$$
\begin{align*}
u \mapsto x=\frac{n_{1}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}{d_{1}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}, & v \mapsto y=\frac{n_{2}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}{d_{2}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)},  \tag{6.9a}\\
\xi \mapsto \chi=\frac{n_{3}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}{d_{3}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}, & \eta \mapsto \psi=\frac{n_{4}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)}{d_{4}(v, \eta, u, \xi ; b, a)} . \tag{6.9b}
\end{align*}
$$

Therefore, $Y$ is a birational map.

Remark 6.2.3 Functions $d_{i}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b), i=1,2,3,4$, must depend on the odd variables in a way such that their expressions are even. For example, the expression $x y+\chi \psi$ is even.

Proposition 6.2.4 If $L=L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda)$ is a Lax matrix with corresponding YB map, $Y$ : $(x, \chi, y, \psi) \mapsto(u, \xi, v, \eta)$, then $\operatorname{str}(L(y, \psi, b ; \lambda) L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda))$ is a generating function of invariants of the YB map.

## Proof

Since,

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{str}(L(u, \xi, a ; \lambda) L(v, \eta, b ; \lambda)) & \stackrel{(4.12)}{=} \operatorname{str}(L(y, \psi, b ; \lambda) L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda)) \\
= & \operatorname{str}(L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda) L(y, \psi, b ; \lambda)) \tag{6.10}
\end{align*}
$$

and function $\operatorname{str}(L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda) L(y, \psi, b ; \lambda))$ can be written as $\operatorname{str}(L(x, \chi, a ; \lambda) L(y, \psi, b ; \lambda))$ $=\sum_{k} \lambda^{k} I_{k}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)$, from (6.10) follows that

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{i}(u, \xi, v, \eta ; a, b)=I_{i}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b) \tag{6.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which are invariants for $Y$.

Remark 6.2.5 The invariants of a YB map, $I_{i}(x, \chi, y, \psi ; a, b)$, may not be functionally independent.

### 6.3 Extensions of Darboux transformations on Grassmann algebras

In this section we consider the Grassmann extensions of the Darboux matrices corresponding to the NLS equation and the DNLS equation. In particular, we present the noncommutative extension of Darboux matrices (3.36) (see [38]) and (3.54) (see [37]).

### 6.3.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation

The Grassmann extension of the Darboux matrix (3.36) was constructed in [38]. We present this Darboux matrix together with its associated Lax operator and we will use it in the next section to construct a Grassmann extension of the Adler-Yamilov map.

Specifically, let us consider a more general Lax operator than (3.33), namely the following noncommutative extension of the NLS operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}:=D_{x}+U(p, q, \psi, \phi, \zeta, \kappa ; \lambda)=D_{x}+\lambda U^{1}+U^{0} \tag{6.12a}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U^{1}$ and $U^{0}$ are given by

$$
U^{1}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1,0), \quad U^{0}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 2 p & \theta  \tag{6.12b}\\
2 q & 0 & \zeta \\
\phi & \kappa & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $p, q \in G_{0}$ and $\psi, \phi, \zeta, \kappa \in G_{1}$. Note that, if we set the odd variables equal to zero, operator (6.12) coincides with (3.33).

A linear in the spectral parameter Darboux matrix for (3.33) is given by the following [38].

Proposition 6.3.1 Let $M=\lambda M_{1}+M_{0}$ be a Darboux matrix for (6.12). Moreover, let $M$ define a Darboux transformation of rank 1. Then, up to a gauge transformation, $M$ is of the following form

$$
M\left(p, q, \theta, \phi ; c_{1}, c_{2}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
F+\lambda & p & \theta  \tag{6.13}\\
q_{10} & c_{1} & 0 \\
\phi_{10} & 0 & c_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $c_{1}$ and $c_{2}$ can be either 1 or 0 . In the case where $c_{1}=c_{2}=1$, the entries of
$M(p, q, \theta, \phi ; 1,1)$ satisfy the following system of differential-difference equations

$$
\begin{align*}
F_{x} & =2\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10}\right)+\theta \phi-\theta_{10} \phi_{10},  \tag{6.14a}\\
p_{x} & =2\left(F p-p_{10}\right)+\theta \zeta,  \tag{6.14b}\\
q_{10, x} & =2\left(q-q_{10} F\right)-\kappa_{10} \phi_{10},  \tag{6.14c}\\
\theta_{x} & =F \theta-\theta_{10}+p \kappa,  \tag{6.14d}\\
\phi_{10, x} & =\phi-\phi_{10} F-\zeta_{10} q_{10}, \tag{6.14e}
\end{align*}
$$

and the algebraic equations

$$
\begin{align*}
\theta q_{10} & =(\mathcal{S}-1) \kappa,  \tag{6.15a}\\
\phi_{10} p & =(\mathcal{S}-1) \zeta . \tag{6.15b}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

Substitution of $M$ to equation (3.9) implies a second order algebraic equation in $\lambda$. Equating the coefficients of the several powers of $\lambda$ equal to zero, we obtain the following system of equations

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
\lambda^{2}: & {\left[U^{1}, M_{1}\right]=0,} \\
\lambda^{1}: & M_{1, x}+\left[U^{1}, M_{0}\right]+U_{10}^{0} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{0}=0, \\
\lambda^{0}: & M_{0, x}+U_{10}^{0} M_{0}-M_{0} U^{0}=0 . \tag{6.16c}
\end{array}
$$

The first equation, (6.16a), implies that $M_{1}$ must be diagonal, say $M_{1}=\operatorname{diag}(\alpha, \beta, \gamma)$. Then, from the diagonal part of (6.16b) we deduce that $\alpha_{x}=\beta_{x}=\gamma_{x}=0$. Since $\operatorname{rank}\left(M_{1}\right)=1$, only one of $\alpha, \beta$ and $\gamma$ can be nonzero. Without any loss of generality, we choose $\alpha=1$ and $\beta=\gamma=0$.

Now, the off-diagonal part of (6.16b) implies $M_{0,12}=p, M_{0,13}=\theta, M_{0,21}=q_{10}, M_{0,31}=$ $\phi_{10}$ and $M_{0,32}=M_{0,23}=0$. We call the $M_{0,11}$ entry $M_{0,11}=F$.

Finally, from equation (6.16c) we obtain $\left(M_{0,22}\right)_{x}=\left(M_{0,33}\right)_{x}=0$, namely $M_{0,22}=c_{1}$, $M_{0,22}=c_{2}$, together with equations (6.14).

Note 6.3.2 At this point, it is worth mentioning that the superdeterminant of matrix $M(p, q, \theta, \phi ; 1,1)$ in (6.13) implies the following

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(F-p q_{10}-\phi_{10} \theta\right)=0 \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $\partial_{x}(\operatorname{sdet}(M))=0$. Moreover, (6.17) is a first integral for system (6.14) for $c_{1}=$ $c_{2}=1$.

Remark 6.3.3 If one sets the odd variables equal to zero, matrix (6.13) the results of Proposition 6.3.1 agree with those in Proposition 3.4.1 presented in chapter 3.

### 6.3.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation

Let us now consider a more general than (3.49), namely the following noncommutative extension of the DNLS operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{L}=D_{x}+\lambda^{2} U^{2}+\lambda U^{1} \tag{6.18a}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
U^{2}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1,-1) \quad \text { and } \quad U^{1}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 2 p & 2 \theta  \tag{6.18b}\\
2 q & 0 & 0 \\
2 \phi & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

Operator (6.18) is invariant under the transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1}(\lambda): \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \rightarrow \mathcal{L}(-\lambda)=\mathfrak{s}_{3} \mathcal{L}(\lambda) \mathfrak{s}_{3} \tag{6.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathfrak{s}_{3}=\operatorname{diag}(1,-1,-1), \mathfrak{s}_{3}^{2}=1$.
We are seeking a Darboux matrix for (6.18) with square dependence in the spectral parameter, namely of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
M=\lambda^{2} M_{2}+\lambda M_{1}+M_{0} \tag{6.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{i}, i=0,1,2$, is a $3 \times 3$ matrix.

Lemma 6.3.4 Let $M$ be a second order matrix polynomial in $\lambda$ of the form (6.20). Then, $M$ is invariant under the involution $s_{1}(\lambda)$ iff

$$
\begin{align*}
& M_{i, 12}=M_{i, 13}=M_{i, 21}=M_{i, 31}=0, \quad i=0,2, \quad \text { and }  \tag{6.21a}\\
& M_{1,11}=M_{1,22}=M_{1,33}=M_{1,23}=M_{1,32}=0 \tag{6.21b}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

It can be readily proven from $M(-\lambda)=\mathfrak{s}_{3} M(\lambda) \mathfrak{s}_{3}$.

We restrict ourselves to the case where $M_{2}$ in (6.20) has rank one.

Proposition 6.3.5 Let $M$ be a Darboux matrix for (6.18) of the form (6.20), with rank $M_{2}=1$, and suppose that it is invariant under the involution (6.19). Then, up to a gauge transformation, $M$ is given by

$$
M\left(f, p, q_{10}, \theta, \phi_{10} ; c_{1}, c_{2}\right)=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
f & 0 & 0  \tag{6.22}\\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & f p & f \theta \\
q_{10} f & 0 & 0 \\
\phi_{10} f & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
c_{1} & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & c_{2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where its entries satisfy the following differential-difference equations

$$
\begin{align*}
f_{x} & =2 f\left(p q-p_{10} q_{10} \theta \phi-\theta_{10} \phi_{10}\right),  \tag{6.23a}\\
p_{x} & =2 p\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q+\theta_{10} \phi_{10}-\theta \phi\right)-2 \frac{c_{2} p_{10}-c_{1} p}{f}  \tag{6.23b}\\
q_{10, x} & =2 q_{10}\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q+\theta_{10} \phi_{10}-\theta \phi\right)-2 \frac{c_{1} q_{10}-c_{2} q}{f}  \tag{6.23c}\\
\theta_{x} & =2 \phi\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q+\theta_{10} \phi_{10}-\theta \phi\right)+\frac{c_{1} \theta-c_{2} \theta_{10}}{f}  \tag{6.23d}\\
\phi_{10, x} & =2 \phi_{10}\left(p_{10} q_{10}-p q+\theta_{10} \phi_{10}-\theta \phi\right)+\frac{c_{2} \phi-c_{1} \phi_{10}}{f} \tag{6.23e}
\end{align*}
$$

## Proof

First of all, for the entries of matrices $M_{i}, i=1,2,3$ we have (6.21). Then, substitution of $M$ to equation (3.9) implies a second order algebraic equation in $\lambda$. Equating the coefficients of the several powers of $\lambda$ equal to zero, we obtain the following system of
equations

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[U^{2}, M_{2}\right] } & =0  \tag{6.24a}\\
{\left[U^{2}, M_{1}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{2}-M_{2} U^{1} } & =0  \tag{6.24b}\\
M_{2, x}+\left[U^{2}, M_{0}\right]+U_{10}^{1} M_{1}-M_{1} U^{1} & =0  \tag{6.24c}\\
M_{1, x}+U_{10}^{1} M_{0}-M_{0} U^{1} & =0  \tag{6.24d}\\
M_{0, x} & =0 \tag{6.24e}
\end{align*}
$$

From (6.24e) follows that the matrix $M_{0}$ must be constant, whereas equation (6.24a) implies that $M_{2}$ is diagonal. Since $\operatorname{rank} M_{2}=1$ we can choose $M_{2}=\operatorname{diag}\{f, 0,0\}$ without loss of generality; the cases $M_{2}=\operatorname{diag}\{0, g, 0\}$ and $M_{2}=\operatorname{diag}\{0,0, h\}$ lead to gauge equivalent Darboux matrices. In this case, from equation (6.24b) we have that the entries of $M_{1}$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1,12}=f p, \quad M_{1,13}=f \theta, \quad M_{1,21}=q_{10} f \quad \text { and } \quad M_{1,31}=\phi_{10} f . \tag{6.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, from equation (6.24c) we deduce equation (6.23a) and that $M_{0}$ must be diagonal, namely of the form $M_{0}=\operatorname{diag}\left(c_{1}, 1, c_{2}\right)$ (one of the parameters along its diagonal can be rescaled to 1). Therefore, matrix $M$ is of the form (6.22).

Finally, equation (6.24d) implies system (6.23b)-(6.23e) (where we have made use of (6.23a)).

Note 6.3.6 Entry $f$ is permitted to appear in the denominator in (6.23), as it is an even variable. This is due to the superdeterminant of matrix $M$. In fact, the constant determinant property of matrix $M\left(f, p, q_{10}, \theta, \phi_{10} ; 1,1\right)$ implies the following equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{x}\left(f-f^{2}\left(p q_{10}+\theta \phi_{10}\right)\right)=0, \tag{6.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

which makes it quite obvious that $f$ must be even. Moreover, (6.26) is a first integral for the system of differential-difference equations (6.23).

Remark 6.3.7 The results of Proposition 6.3.5 agree with those of Proposition 3.4.3 if one sets the odd variables equal to zero.

### 6.4 Grassmann extensions of Yang-Baxter maps

Here we employ the Darboux matrices presented in the previous section to construct tendimensional YB maps, which can be restricted to eight-dimensional YB maps on invariant leaves. We start with the case of NLS equation.

### 6.4.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation

According to (6.13) we define the following matrix

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
X+\lambda & x_{1} & \chi_{1}  \tag{6.27}\\
x_{2} & 1 & 0 \\
\chi_{2} & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right), \quad \mathbf{x}:=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \chi_{1}, \chi_{2}, X\right)
$$

and substitute to the Lax equation.

The corresponding algebraic variety is a union of two ten-dimensional components. The first one is obvious from the refactorisation problem, and it corresponds to the permutation map

$$
\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{y}, \quad \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{x},
$$

which is a trivial YB map. The second one can be represented as a ten-dimensional noninvolutive Yang-Baxter map given by

$$
\begin{align*}
x_{1} & \mapsto u_{1}=y_{1}-\frac{X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}-Y+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}} x_{1},  \tag{6.28a}\\
x_{2} & \mapsto u_{2}=y_{2},  \tag{6.28b}\\
\chi_{1} & \mapsto \xi_{1}=\psi_{1}-\frac{X-x_{1} x_{2}-Y+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} \chi_{1},  \tag{6.28c}\\
\chi_{2} & \mapsto \xi_{2}=\psi_{2},  \tag{6.28d}\\
X & \mapsto U=\frac{X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+\left(x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right) Y+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}},  \tag{6.28e}\\
y_{1} & \mapsto v_{1}=x_{1},  \tag{6.28f}\\
y_{2} & \mapsto v_{2}=x_{2}+\frac{X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}-Y+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}} y_{2},  \tag{6.28~g}\\
\psi_{1} & \mapsto \eta_{1}=\chi_{1}, \tag{6.28h}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \psi_{2} \mapsto \eta_{2}=\chi_{2}+\frac{X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}-Y+y_{1} y_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} \psi_{2},  \tag{6.28i}\\
& Y \mapsto V=\frac{\left(x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right) X+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+Y-y_{1} y_{2}-\psi_{1} \psi_{2}}{1+x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}} . \tag{6.28j}
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, map (6.28) is birational due to Proposition 6.2.2.

## Restriction on invariant leaves: Extension of Adler-Yamilov map

In this section, we derive an eight-dimensional Yang-Baxter map from map (6.28). This is a Grassmann extension of the Adler-Yamilov map [10, 51, 76]. Our proof is motivated by the existence of the first integral (6.17).

In particular, we have the following

Proposition 6.4.1 1. The quantities $\Phi=X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}$ and $\Psi=Y-y_{1} y_{2}-\psi_{1} \psi_{2}$ are invariants (first integrals) of the map (6.28),
2. The ten-dimensional map (6.28) can be restricted to an eight-dimensional map $Y_{a, b}$ : $A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$, where $A_{a}, A_{b}$ are level sets of the first integrals $\Phi$ and $\Psi$, namely

$$
\begin{align*}
& A_{a}=\left\{\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \chi_{1}, \chi_{2}, X\right) \in K^{5} ; X=a+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right\},  \tag{6.29a}\\
& A_{b}=\left\{\left(y_{1}, y_{2}, \psi_{1}, \psi_{2}, Y\right) \in K^{5} ; Y=b+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}\right\}, \tag{6.29b}
\end{align*}
$$

3. The bosonic limit of map $Y_{a, b}$ is the Adler-Yamilov map.

## Proof

1. It can be readily verified that (6.28) implies $U-u_{1} u_{2}-\xi_{1} \xi_{2}=X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}$ and $V-v_{1} v_{2}-\eta_{1} \eta_{2}=Y-y_{1} y_{2}-\psi_{1} \psi_{2}$. Thus, $\Phi$ and $\Psi$ are invariants, i.e. first integrals of the map.
2. The existence of the restriction is obvious. Using the conditions $X=x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+$ $a$ and $Y=y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}+b$, one can eliminate $X$ and $Y$ from (6.28). The resulting map is $\mathbf{x} \rightarrow \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), \mathbf{y} \rightarrow \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{v}(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$, where $\mathbf{u}$ and $\mathbf{v}$ are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbf{u}=\left(y_{1}+\frac{(b-a)\left(1+x_{1} y_{2}-\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(1+x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} x_{1}, y_{2}, \psi_{1}+\frac{b-a}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} \chi_{2}, \psi_{2}\right),  \tag{6.30a}\\
& \mathbf{v}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}+\frac{(a-b)\left(1+x_{1} y_{2}-\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(1+x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} y_{2}, \quad \chi_{1}, \quad \chi_{2}+\frac{a-b}{1+x_{1} y_{2}} \psi_{2}\right) . \tag{6.30b}
\end{align*}
$$

3. If one sets the odd variables of the above map equal to zero, namely $\chi_{1}=\chi_{2}=0$ and $\psi_{1}=\psi_{2}=0$, then the map (6.30) coincides with the Adler-Yamilov map.

Now, one can use the condition $X=x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+a$ to eliminate $X$ from the Lax matrix (6.27), i.e.

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
a+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+\lambda & x_{1} & \chi_{1}  \tag{6.31}\\
x_{2} & 1 & 0 \\
\chi_{2} & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

which corresponds to the Darboux matrix derived in [38]. Now, Adler-Yamilov map's extension follows from the strong Lax representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\mathbf{u} ; a, \lambda) M(\mathbf{v} ; b, \lambda)=M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda) . \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, the extension of the Adler-Yamilov's map (6.30) is a reversible parametric YB map. Moreover, it is easy to verify that it is not involutive. Birationality of map (6.30) is due to Prop. 6.2.2.

Now, from $\operatorname{str}(M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda))$ we obtain the following invariants for map (6.30)

$$
\begin{aligned}
& T_{1}=a+b+x_{1} x_{2}+y_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}, \\
& T_{2}=\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)\left(b+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)+x_{1} y_{2}+x_{2} y_{1}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}-\chi_{2} \psi_{1}
\end{aligned}
$$

However, these are linear combinations of the following integrals

$$
\begin{align*}
I_{1}= & \left(a+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)\left(b+y_{1} y_{2}\right)+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}\right)+x_{1} y_{2}+ \\
& x_{2} y_{1}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}-\chi_{2} \psi_{1},  \tag{6.33a}\\
I_{2}= & x_{1} x_{2}+y_{1} y_{2}, \quad I_{3}=\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}, \quad I_{4}=\chi_{1} \chi_{2} \psi_{1} \psi_{2} . \tag{6.33b}
\end{align*}
$$

These are in involution with respect to the Poisson bracket

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\{x_{1}, x_{2}\right\}=\left\{y_{1}, y_{2}\right\}=1, \quad\left\{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\}=\left\{\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\}=1 \quad \text { and all the rest } \\
& \left\{x_{i}, x_{j}\right\}=\left\{y_{i}, y_{j}\right\}=\left\{x_{i}, y_{j}\right\}=0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

and the corresponding Poisson matrix is invariant under the YB map (6.30). However, we cannot make any conclusions about the Liouville integrability of (6.30), as $I_{3}$ and $I_{4}$ are not functionally independent (notice that $I_{3}^{2}=2 I_{4}$ ).

### 6.4.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation

According to matrix $M\left(p, q_{10}, \theta, \phi_{10} ; 1,1\right)$ in (6.22) we consider the following matrix

$$
M(\mathbf{x} ; \lambda)=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
X & 0 & 0  \tag{6.34}\\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & x_{1} & \chi_{1} \\
x_{2} & 0 & 0 \\
\chi_{2} & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\mathbf{x}=\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, \chi_{1}, \chi_{2}, X\right)$ and, in particular, we have set

$$
\begin{equation*}
X:=f, \quad x_{1}:=f p, \quad x_{2}=f q_{10}, \quad \chi_{1}:=f \theta \quad \text { and } \quad \chi_{2}:=\psi_{10} f . \tag{6.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

The Lax equation for the above matrix implies the following equations

$$
\begin{align*}
& U+V+u_{1} v_{2}+\xi_{1} \eta_{2}=Y+X+y_{1} x_{2}+\psi_{1} \chi_{2}  \tag{6.36a}\\
& U v_{i}=x_{i} Y, \quad i=1,3, \quad V u_{i}=y_{i} X, \quad i=2,4  \tag{6.36b}\\
& u_{i}+v_{i}=x_{i}+y_{i}, \quad i=1, \ldots, 4 \tag{6.36c}
\end{align*}
$$

As in the previous section, the algebraic variety consists of two components. The first ten-dimensional component corresponds to the permutation map

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\mathbf{y}, \quad \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\mathbf{x} \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the second corresponds to the following ten-dimensional YB map

$$
\begin{align*}
& \mathbf{x} \mapsto \mathbf{u}=\left(y_{1}+\frac{f}{g} x_{1}, \frac{g}{h} y_{2}, \psi_{1}+\frac{f}{g} \chi_{1}, \frac{g}{h} \psi_{2}, \frac{g}{h} Y\right),  \tag{6.38a}\\
& \mathbf{y} \mapsto \mathbf{v}=\left(\frac{h}{g} x_{1}, x_{2}+\frac{f}{h} y_{2}, \frac{h}{g} \chi_{1}, \chi_{2}+\frac{f}{h} \psi_{2}, \frac{h}{f} X\right) . \tag{6.38b}
\end{align*}
$$

where $f=f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}), g=g(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ and $h=h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ are given by the following expressions

$$
\begin{align*}
& f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}-Y+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}  \tag{6.39a}\\
& g(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=X-x_{1}\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right)-\chi_{1}\left(\chi_{2}+\psi_{2}\right)  \tag{6.39b}\\
& h(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})=Y-\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right) y_{2}-\left(\chi_{1}+\psi_{1}\right) \psi_{2} . \tag{6.39c}
\end{align*}
$$

### 6.4.3 Restriction on invariant leaves

In this section, we show that the map given by (6.38)-(6.39) can be restricted to a completely integrable eight-dimensional YB map on invariant leaves. As in the previous section, the idea of this restriction is motivated by the first integral (6.26).

Particularly, we have the following

Proposition 6.4.2 1. $\Phi=X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}$ and $\Psi=Y-y_{1} y_{2}-\psi_{1} \psi_{2}$ are invariants of the map (6.38)-(6.39),
2. The ten-dimensional map (6.38)-(6.39) can be restricted to an eight-dimensional map $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$, where $A_{a}, A_{b}$ are given by (6.29).
3. The bosonic limit of the above eight-dimensional map is map (5.42), corresponding to the DNLS equation.

## Proof

1. Map (6.38)-(6.39) implies $U-u_{1} u_{2}-\xi_{1} \xi_{2}=X-x_{1} x_{2}-\chi_{1} \chi_{2}$ and $V-v_{1} v_{2}-\eta_{1} \eta_{2}=$ $Y-y_{1} y_{2}-\psi_{1} \psi_{2}$. Therefore, $\Phi$ and $\Psi$ are first integrals of the map.
2. The conditions $X=x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+a$ and $Y=y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}+b$ define the level sets, $A_{a}$ and $A_{b}$, of $\Phi$ and $\Psi$, respectively. Using these conditions, we can eliminate $X$ and $Y$ from map (6.38)-(6.39). The resulting map, $Y_{a, b}: A_{a} \times A_{b} \longrightarrow A_{a} \times A_{b}$,
is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
& x_{1} \mapsto u_{1}=y_{1}+\frac{(a-b)\left(a-x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(a-x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} x_{1},  \tag{6.40a}\\
& x_{2} \mapsto u_{2}=\frac{\left(a-x_{1} y_{2}-\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)\left(b-x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(b-x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} y_{2},  \tag{6.40b}\\
& \chi_{1} \mapsto \xi_{1}=\psi_{1}+\frac{a-b}{a-x_{1} y_{2}} \chi_{1},  \tag{6.40c}\\
& \chi_{2} \mapsto \xi_{2}=\frac{a-x_{1} y_{2}}{b-x_{1} y_{2}} \psi_{2},  \tag{6.40d}\\
& y_{1} \mapsto v_{1}=\frac{\left(b-x_{1} y_{2}-\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)\left(a-x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(a-x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} x_{1},  \tag{6.40e}\\
& y_{2} \mapsto v_{2}=x_{2}+\frac{(b-a)\left(b-x_{1} y_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)}{\left(b-x_{1} y_{2}\right)^{2}} y_{2},  \tag{6.40f}\\
& \psi_{1} \mapsto \eta_{1}=\frac{b-x_{1} y_{2}}{a-x_{1} y_{2}} \chi_{1},  \tag{6.40~g}\\
& \psi_{2} \mapsto \eta_{2}=\chi_{2}+\frac{b-a}{b-x_{1} y_{2}} \psi_{2} . \tag{6.40h}
\end{align*}
$$

3. Setting the odd variables of the above map equal to zero, namely $\chi_{1}=\chi_{2}=0$ and $\psi_{1}=\psi_{2}=0$, we obtain the YB map (5.42).

This proves the Proposition.

Now, using condition $X=x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+a$, matrix (6.34) takes the following form

$$
M=\lambda^{2}\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
k+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2} & 0 & 0  \tag{6.41}\\
0 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\lambda\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & x_{1} & \chi_{1} \\
x_{2} & 0 & 0 \\
\chi_{2} & 0 & 0
\end{array}\right)+\left(\begin{array}{lll}
1 & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 1 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & 1
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Map (6.40) has the following Lax representation

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\mathbf{u} ; a, \lambda) M(\mathbf{v} ; b, \lambda)=M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda) . \tag{6.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore, it is reversible parametric YB map which is birational due to Prop. 6.2.2. It can also be verified that it is not involutive.

For the integrability of map (6.40) we have the following

Proposition 6.4.3 Map (6.40) is completely integrable.

## Proof

The invariants of map (6.40) which we retrieve from $\operatorname{str}(M(\mathbf{y} ; b, \lambda) M(\mathbf{x} ; a, \lambda))$ are

$$
\begin{aligned}
& K_{1}=\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)\left(b+y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}\right) \\
& K_{2}=a+b+x_{1} x_{2}+y_{1} y_{2}+x_{1} y_{2}+x_{2} y_{1}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}+\chi_{1} \psi_{2}-\chi_{2} \psi_{1}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the constant terms can be omitted. However, $K_{1}$ is sum of the following quantities

$$
\begin{align*}
& I_{1}=\left(a+x_{1} x_{2}\right)\left(y_{1} y_{2}+\psi_{1} \psi_{2}\right)+b\left(x_{1} x_{2}+\chi_{1} \chi_{2}\right)+y_{1} y_{2} \chi_{1} \chi_{2}  \tag{6.43a}\\
& I_{2}=\chi_{1} \chi_{2} \psi_{1} \psi_{2} \tag{6.43b}
\end{align*}
$$

which are invariants themselves. Moreover, $K_{2}$ is sum of the following invariants

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{3}=\left(x_{1}+y_{1}\right)\left(x_{2}+y_{2}\right) \quad \text { and } \quad I_{4}=\left(\chi_{1}+\psi_{1}\right)\left(\chi_{2}+\psi_{2}\right) \tag{6.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

In fact, the quantities $C_{i}=x_{i}+y_{i}$ are invariants theirselves.
We construct a Poisson matrix, $J$, such that the following equation is satisfied

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla C_{i} \cdot J=0 \tag{6.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

In this case the Poisson bracket is given by

$$
\begin{gathered}
\left\{x_{1}, x_{2}\right\}=\left\{x_{2}, y_{1}\right\}=\left\{y_{2}, x_{1}\right\}=\left\{y_{1}, y_{2}\right\}=1 \\
\left\{\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\}=\left\{\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\}=1 \quad \text { and } \quad\left\{\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\}=\left\{\psi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\}=-1 .
\end{gathered}
$$

Map (6.40) preserves the Poisson bracket. Moreover, due to (6.45), $C_{i}$ 's are Casimir functions as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\{C_{i}, f\right\}=\left(\nabla C_{i}\right) \cdot J \cdot(\nabla f)^{t}=0, \quad \text { for any } \quad f=f(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) . \tag{6.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the invariants $I_{1}$ and $I_{2}$ are in involution with respect to this Poisson matrix, namely $\nabla I_{1} \cdot J \cdot\left(\nabla I_{2}\right)^{t}=0$. The rank of the Poisson matrix is 4 and $C_{i}, i=1,2,3,4$, are four Casimir functions. Therefore, the eight-dimensional map (6.40) is completely integrable.

### 6.5 Vector generalisations: $4 N \times 4 N$ Yang-Baxter maps

In what follows we use the following notation for a $n-$ vector $\mathbf{w}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{n}\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \mathbf{w}=\left(\mathbf{w}_{1}, \mathbf{w}_{2}, \boldsymbol{\omega}_{1}, \boldsymbol{\omega}_{2}\right), \quad \text { where } \quad \mathbf{w}_{1}=\left(w_{1}, \ldots, w_{N}\right), \quad \mathbf{w}_{2}=\left(w_{N+1}, \ldots, w_{2 N}\right) \\
& \text { and } \quad \boldsymbol{\omega}_{1}=\left(\omega_{2 N+1}, \ldots, \omega_{3 N}\right), \quad \boldsymbol{\omega}_{2}=\left(\omega_{3 N+1}, \ldots, \omega_{4 N}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\mathbf{w}_{1}$ and $\mathbf{w}_{2}$ are even and $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{1}$ and $\boldsymbol{\omega}_{2}$ are odds. Also,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle u_{i}\right|:=\mathbf{u}_{i}, \quad\left|w_{i}\right\rangle:=\mathbf{w}_{i}^{T} \quad \text { and their dot product with } \quad\left\langle u_{i}, w_{i}\right\rangle . \tag{6.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 6.5.1 Nonlinear Schrödinger equation

Now, we replace the variables in map (6.30) with $N$-vectors, namely we consider the following $4 N \times 4 N$ map

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle u_{1}\right|=\left\langle y_{1}\right|+f(z ; a, b)\left\langle x_{1}\right|\left(1+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle-\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right)  \tag{6.48a}\\
\left\langle u_{2}\right|=\left\langle y_{2}\right| \\
\left\langle\xi_{1}\right|=\left\langle\psi_{1}\right|+f(z ; a, b)\left\langle\chi_{1}\right|\left(1+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle-\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right) \\
\left\langle\xi_{2}\right|=\left\langle\psi_{2}\right|
\end{array}\right.
$$

and

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\left\langle v_{1}\right|=\left\langle x_{1}\right|  \tag{6.48b}\\
\left\langle v_{2}\right|=\left\langle x_{2}\right|+f(z ; b, a)\left\langle y_{2}\right|\left(1+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle-\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right) \\
\left\langle\eta_{1}\right|=\left\langle\chi_{1}\right| \\
\left\langle\eta_{2}\right|=\left\langle\chi_{2}\right|+f(z ; b, a)\left\langle y_{4}\right|\left(1+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle-\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right)
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $f$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(z ; b, a)=\frac{b-a}{(1+z)^{2}}, \quad z:=\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle \tag{6.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

Map (6.48)-(6.49) is a reversible parametric YB map, for it has the following strong Laxrepresentation

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(\mathbf{u} ; a) M(\mathbf{v} ; b)=M(\mathbf{y} ; b) M(\mathbf{x} ; a) \tag{6.50}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
M(\mathbf{w} ; a)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\lambda+a+\left\langle w_{1}, w_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\omega_{1}, \omega_{2}\right\rangle & \left\langle w_{1}\right| & \left\langle\omega_{1}\right|  \tag{6.51}\\
\left|w_{2}\right\rangle & & \\
\left|\omega_{2}\right\rangle & I_{2 N-1} &
\end{array}\right)
$$

Moreover, map (6.48)-(6.49) is birational and not involutive.

The invariants of this map are given by

$$
\begin{align*}
I_{1}= & a+b+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle,  \tag{6.52a}\\
I_{2}= & b\left(\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle\right)+a\left(\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right)+\left(\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\right.  \tag{6.52b}\\
& \left.\left\langle\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right)\left(\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

However, the number of the invariants we obtain from the supertrace of the monodromy matrix is not enough to claim integrability in the Liouville sense.

### 6.5.2 Derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation

Now, replacing the variables in (6.40) with $N$-vectors we obtain the following $4 N \times 4 N$ dimensional map

$$
\begin{cases}\left\langle u_{1}\right| & =\left\langle y_{1}\right|+h(z ; a, b)\left\langle x_{1}\right|\left(a-\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right),  \tag{6.53a}\\ \left\langle u_{2}\right| & =g(z ; a, b)\left\langle y_{2}\right|-h(z ; b, a)\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\left\langle y_{2}\right|, \\ \left\langle\xi_{1}\right| & =\left\langle\psi_{1}\right|+f(z ; a, b)\left\langle\chi_{1}\right|, \\ \left\langle\xi_{2}\right| & =g(z ; a, b)\left\langle\psi_{2}\right|,\end{cases}
$$

and

$$
\begin{cases}\left\langle v_{1}\right| & =g(z ; b, a)\left\langle x_{1}\right|-h(z ; a, b)\left\langle x_{1}\right|  \tag{6.53b}\\ \left\langle v_{2}\right| & =\left\langle x_{2}\right|+h(z ; b, a)\left\langle y_{2}\right|\left(b-\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right), \\ \left\langle\eta_{1}\right| & =g(z ; b, a)\left\langle\chi_{1}\right|, \\ \left\langle\eta_{2}\right| & =\left\langle\chi_{2}\right|+f(z ; b, a)\left\langle\psi_{2}\right|,\end{cases}
$$

where $f, g$ and $h$ are given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
f(z ; a, b)=\frac{a-b}{a-z}, \quad g(z ; a, b)=\frac{a-z}{b-z}, \quad h(z ; a, b)=\frac{a-b}{(a-z)^{2}}, \quad z:=\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle \tag{6.54}
\end{equation*}
$$

Map (6.53)-(6.54) is reversible parametric YB map, as it has the strong Lax-representation (6.50) where

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\lambda^{2}\left(k+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle\right) & \lambda\left\langle x_{1}\right| & \lambda\left\langle\chi_{1}\right|  \tag{6.55}\\
\lambda\left|x_{2}\right\rangle & & \\
\lambda\left|\chi_{2}\right\rangle & I_{2 N} &
\end{array}\right) .
$$

Moreover, it is a non-involutive map and birational.
The invariants of the map that we retrieve from the supertrace of the monodromy matrix are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
K_{1}= & \left(a+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle\right)\left(b+\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle\right) \\
K_{2}= & a+b+\left\langle x_{1}, x_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle y_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{1}, y_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle x_{2}, y_{1}\right\rangle+\left\langle\chi_{1}, \chi_{2}\right\rangle+\left\langle\psi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle+ \\
& \left\langle\chi_{1}, \psi_{2}\right\rangle-\left\langle\chi_{2} \psi_{1}\right\rangle .
\end{aligned}
$$

In fact, $K_{2}$ is a sum of the following invariants

$$
\begin{equation*}
I_{1}=\left\langle x_{1}+y_{1}, x_{2}+y_{2}\right\rangle, \quad I_{2}=\left\langle\chi_{1}+\chi_{2}, \psi_{1}+\psi_{2}\right\rangle \tag{6.56}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the entries of the above dot products are invariant vectors. However, as in the case of the NLS vector generalisation in the previous section, the invariants are not enought to claim Liouville integrability.

## Chapter 7

## Conclusions

### 7.1 Summary of results

In this thesis we used Darboux transformations as the main tool to first link integrable partial differential equations to discrete integrable systems and, then, to construct parametric Yang-Baxter maps.

In particular, we constructed Darboux matrices for certain Lax operators of NLS type and employed them in the derivation of integrable systems of difference equations. The advantage of this approach is that it provides us not only with difference equations, but also with their Lax pairs, symmetries, first integrals and conservation laws; even with Bäcklund transformations for the original partial differential equations they are related to. Then, using first integrals in a systematic way we were able to reduce some of our systems to integrable equations of Toda type.

In fact, we studied the cases of the NLS equation, the DNLS equation and a deformation of the DNLS equation. These equations were not randomly chosen, but their associated Lax operators possess certain symmetries, namely they are invariant under action of (reduction) groups of transformation which correspond to some classification results on automorphic Lie algebras.

More precisely, we derived novel systems of difference equations, namely systems (3.83), (3.101) and (3.113), which are actually systems with vertex and bond variables [42].

These systems have symmetries and first integrals which follow from the derivation of the Darboux matrix and they are integrable in the sense that they possess Lax pair. Additionally, they are multidimensionally consistent.

On the other hand, motivated by the similarity of the Bianchi-type compatibility condition with the Lax equation for Yang-Baxter maps, we used the afore-mentioned Darboux matrices to construct Yang-Baxter maps. Specifically, we constructed ten-dimensional Yang-Baxter maps as solutions of matrix refactorisation problems related to Darboux matrices for all the NLS type equations we mentioned earlier.

Motivated by the fact that the potential-entries of the Darboux matrices obey systems of differential-difference equations which admit certain first integrals, we used the latter to restrict our ten-dimensional maps to four-dimensional Yang-Baxter maps on invariant leaves. Particularly, in the case of NLS equation we derived the Adler-Yamilov map, while in the case of DNLS equation we derived a novel Yang-Baxter map, namely map (5.42). Moreover, we showed that these Yang-Baxter maps are completely integrable and we considered their vector generalisations.

Finally, following [38] where the noncommutative extension of the Darboux transformation for the NLS operator was constructed, we derived the Grassmann extension of the Darboux matrix for the DNLS operator. We employed these Darboux matrices to construct the noncommutative extensions of the Adler-Yamilov map and map (5.42), namely maps (6.30) and (6.40). Moreover, we considered the vector generalisations of these maps.

### 7.2 Future work

The goal of a PhD thesis is not only to solve problems but also to create new ones. Therefore, we list some open problems for future work epigrammatically, and we analyse them.

1. Study the integrability of the transfer maps for the Yang-Baxter maps corresponding to NLS type equations;
2. Study the corresponding entwining Yang-Baxter maps;
3. Examine the possibility of deriving auto-Bäcklund transformations from Yangbaxter maps for the associated partial differential equations;
4. Examine the possibility of deriving hetero-Bäcklund transformations from entwining Yang-baxter maps;
5. Derive auto-Bäcklund and hetero-Bäcklund transformations related to the noncommutative extensions of the NLS and the DNLS equations;
6. Examine the relation between YB maps which have as Lax representations gauge equivalent Darboux matrices.

Regarding 1. one could consider the transfer maps, $T_{n}$, as in [52], which arise out of the consideration of the initial value problem on the staircase, as in Figure 4.3. For their integrability we need to use the monodromy matrix (4.41). However, it is obvious that for $n>2$ the expressions derived from the trace of the generating function (4.41) will be of big length and, therefore, not quite useful for (Liouville) integrability claims. Moreover, the trace of (4.41) does not guarantee that the derived invariants are functionally independent. Thus, the most fruitful approach would be the discovery of a universal generating function of invariants for all the maps $T_{n}, n \in \mathbb{N}$. That may demand that we have to define the transfer maps $T_{n}$ in a different way.

Concerning 2. the idea is to consider a matrix refactorisation problem of the form (4.12) using two different Darboux matrices. For instance, having in our disposal Darboux matrices $M_{1}=M_{1}(x ; a, \lambda)$ and $M_{2}=M_{2}(x ; a, \lambda)$, study the solutions of the following problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1}(u ; a, \lambda) M_{2}(v ; b, \lambda)=M_{2}(y ; b, \lambda) M_{1}(x ; a, \lambda) . \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

For 3. recall that the Yang-Baxter maps in chapter 5 were derived as solutions of matrix refactorisation problems of particular Darboux matrices. Now, one needs to take into account that the entries of these Darboux matrices are potentials satisfying certain partial differential equations. The Yang-Baxter map does not preserve these solutions. Imposing
this as a condition, namely that the Yang-Baxter map maps a solution of a particular PDE to another solution of the same PDE, we obtain some relations among these solutions.

With regards to 4. the idea is to impose that an entwning Yang-Baxter map preserves the the solutions of the associated partial differential equations. Then, check if the resulted relations constitute hetero-Bäcklund transformations for these PDEs.

Concerning 5. the idea is the same with the one mentioned in 3. and 4. but regarding the noncommutative extensions of the Yang-Baxter maps presented in chapter 6.

Finally, regarding 6. one should find how YB maps with gauge equivalent Darboux-Lax representations are related, and use this information to classify them.

## Appendices

## A Solution of the system of discrete equations associated to the deformation of the DNLS equation

The solution of the system (3.113) consists of two branches: The trivial solution given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=p_{10}, \quad q_{01}=q_{01}, \quad v=g, \quad g_{01}=v_{10}, \tag{A.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and a non-trivial given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
p_{01}=\frac{1}{A} \mathcal{F}_{1}, \quad q_{01}=\frac{1}{B} \mathcal{F}_{2}, \quad v=\frac{1}{B} \mathcal{F}_{3}, \quad g_{01}=\frac{1}{A} \mathcal{F}_{4}, \tag{A.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $A$ and $B$ are given by the following expressions

$$
\begin{align*}
A= & \left(g\left(p\left(q_{11}-1\right)+p_{10}-v_{10}\right)+p^{2}\left(q_{11}-1\right)+p q_{10}\left(v_{10}-p_{10}\right)-\right. \\
& \left.\left(q_{10}+1\right)\left(q_{11}-1\right)\right)\left(g\left(p_{10}-p\left(q_{11}+1\right)+v_{10}\right)+p^{2}\left(q_{11}+1\right)-\right.  \tag{A.4a}\\
& \left.p q_{10}\left(p_{10}+v_{10}\right)+\left(q_{10}-1\right)\left(q_{11}+1\right)\right),
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
B= & \left(q_{11}\left(q_{11}-p_{10}\left(g+q_{10}\right)\right)+v_{10}\left(g+q_{10}-q_{11}\right)+p\left(p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}+\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+p_{10}-1\right)\left(p_{10}\left(-g q_{11}+q_{10} q_{11}-1\right)+v_{10}\left(g-q_{10}+q_{11}\right)+\right.  \tag{A.4b}\\
& \left.p\left(p_{10}-q_{11}\left(q_{11}+v_{10}\right)+1\right)+q_{11}^{2}-1\right),
\end{align*}
$$

whereas $\mathcal{F}_{i}, i=1, \ldots, 4$, are given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F}_{1}= & g^{3}\left(p_{10}-p\right)\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)+g^{2}\left(p^{2}\left(p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}\right)-p\left(p_{10}^{2}\left(q_{10} q_{11}+1\right)-p_{10}\left(q_{10}+\right.\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.2 q_{11}\right) v_{10}-q_{11}^{2}+v_{10}^{2}+1\right)+p_{10} q_{11}\left(q_{10}-2 q_{11}\right)+p_{10}+\left(q_{11}-q_{10}\right) v_{10}\right)+ \\
& g\left(q _ { 1 0 } \left(p^{2}\left(v_{10}^{2}-2 p_{10} q_{11} v_{10}+p_{10}^{2}-q_{11}^{2}+1\right)-2 p_{10} q_{11} v_{10}+4 p_{10} p\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+\right.\right. \\
& \left.p_{10}^{2}-q_{11}^{2}+v_{10}^{2}+1\right)+\left(p^{2}-1\right)\left(q_{11}\left(p p_{10}+v_{10}^{2}+1\right)-\left(p+p_{10}\right) v_{10}-q_{11}^{3}\right)+ \\
& \left.\left(p-p_{10}\right) q_{10}^{2}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\right)+\left(\left(p^{2}-1\right) q_{11}+q_{10}\right)\left(p^{2} v_{10}+p q_{10}\left(q_{11}^{2}-v_{10}^{2}-1\right)+\right. \\
& \left.\left(q_{10}^{2}-1\right) v_{10}\right)+p_{10}\left(p^{3} q_{10} v_{10}-p^{2}\left(p^{4}+\left(q_{10}^{2}-1\right)\left(q_{10} q_{11}-1\right)-q_{10}\left(q_{10}-\right.\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.2 q_{10} q_{11}^{2}-q_{11}\right)-2\right)-p q_{10}\left(q_{10}^{2}-2 q_{11} q_{10}+1\right) v_{10}\right)+p p_{10}^{2} q_{10}^{2}\left(q_{10} q_{11}-1\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F}_{2}= & g^{2}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\left(p\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}\right)-g\left(p_{10}^{2}\left(q_{10}-q_{11}\right) v_{10}+\right. \\
& p_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}-1\right) v_{10}^{2}+p\left(p_{10}^{2}\left(q_{11}^{2}+2 q_{10} q_{11}-1\right)-2 p_{10} q_{10}\left(q_{11}^{2}+1\right) v_{10}+\right. \\
& \left.\left(1-q_{11}^{2}+2 q_{10} q_{11}\right) v_{10}^{2}+\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)^{2}\right)+p_{10}^{3}\left(1-q_{10} q_{11}\right)+p_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}+1\right)\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+ \\
& \left.\left(q_{11}-q_{10}\right) v_{10}^{3}-\left(q_{10}+q_{11}\right)\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right) v_{10}\right)+\left(1-p^{2}\right)\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\left(p\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+\right. \\
& \left.p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}\right)+q_{10}\left(2 p^{2}\left(v_{10}-p_{10} q_{11}\right)^{2}+4 p_{10} q_{11} v_{10}+p\left(p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}\right)\left(p_{10}^{2}+\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.q_{11}^{2}-v_{10}^{2}-1\right)-p_{10}^{2}\left(q_{11}^{2}+1\right)-\left(q_{11}^{2}+1\right) v_{10}^{2}+\left(q_{11}^{2}-1\right)^{2}\right)+ \\
& q_{10}^{2}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\left(1-v_{10}\left(q_{11}-p v_{10}\right)-p p_{10}\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathcal{F}_{3}= & g^{2}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\left(p q_{11} v_{10}+(1-p) p_{10}^{2}-v_{10}^{2}\right)+g\left(p ^ { 2 } \left(p_{10}^{2}\left(q_{11}^{2}+1\right)-\right.\right. \\
& \left.4 p_{10} q_{11} v_{10}+q_{11}^{2}\left(v_{10}^{2}+2\right)-q_{11}^{4}+v_{10}^{2}-1\right)+p\left(p _ { 1 0 } ^ { 2 } v _ { 1 0 } \left(q_{11}\left(1-p_{10} q_{10}\right)-\right.\right. \\
& \left.p_{10}+q_{10}\right)+p_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}\left(q_{11}^{2}+v_{10}^{2}-1\right)-q_{11}^{2}+v_{10}^{2}+1\right)-\left(q_{10}+q_{11}\right) v_{10}^{3}+ \\
& \left.\left.\left(q_{10}-q_{11}\right)\left(1-q_{11}^{2}\right) v_{10}\right)+2\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\left(p_{10}\left(q_{10}-q_{11}\right)-q_{10} q_{11} v_{10}+v_{10}\right)\right)- \\
& \left(p\left(p_{10}-q_{11} v_{10}\right)+q_{11}^{2}-1\right)\left(p^{2}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)-p q_{10}\left(p_{10}^{2}+q_{11}^{2}-v_{10}^{2}-1\right)+\right. \\
& \left.\left(q_{10}^{2}-1\right)\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)\right),
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\mathcal{F}_{4}=g^{3}\left(v_{10}-p q_{11}\right)\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)-g^{2}\left(v_{10}\left(q_{11}\left(\left(p^{2}+1\right) q_{11}+q_{10}\right)+p p_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}+2\right)-2\right)-\right.
$$

$$
\left.p\left(q_{10}+q_{11}\right) v_{10}^{2}-q_{11}\left(p q_{11}^{2}+p_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}-1\right)+p\left(p_{10}\left(p+p_{10}\right)-1\right)\right)\right)+
$$

$$
g\left(p^{3} q_{11}\left(p_{10} q_{11}-v_{10}\right)+p^{2}\left(p_{10}\left(2 q_{10}+q_{11}\right) v_{10}+\left(q_{10} q_{11}+1\right)\left(1-p_{10}^{2}-q_{11}^{2}\right)-\right.\right.
$$

$$
\left.q_{10} q_{11} v_{10}^{2}\right)+p\left(q_{11}-q_{10}\left(q_{11}\left(q_{10}-4 q_{11}\right)+4\right)\right) v_{10}-p_{10}\left(q_{11}+q_{10}\left(q_{10} q_{11}-2\right)\right) v_{10}+
$$

$$
\left.p_{10} p\left(q_{10}^{2}-1\right) q_{11}^{2}-\left(q_{10} q_{11}-1\right)\left(p_{10}^{2}+q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+q_{10}\left(q_{10}-q_{11}\right) v_{10}^{2}\right)+
$$

$$
v_{10}\left(q_{11} q_{10}\left(p\left(p_{10}\left(1-p^{2}\right)+p_{10} q_{10}^{2}+p\right)+q_{10}^{2}-1\right)+q_{11}^{2}\left(\left(1-p^{2}\right)^{2}-\left(p^{2}+1\right) q_{10}^{2}\right)+\right.
$$

$$
\left.2 p\left(p-p_{10}\right) q_{10}^{2}\right)+\left(1-p^{2}-q_{10} q_{11}\right)\left(p_{10} p^{2} q_{11}-p q_{10}\left(p_{10}^{2}+q_{11}^{2}-1\right)+\right.
$$

$$
\left.p_{10}\left(q_{10}^{2}-1\right) q_{11}\right)+p q_{10}^{2}\left(q_{11}-q_{10}\right) v_{10}^{2} .
$$

## Bibliography

[1] M.J. Ablowitz and P.A. Clarkson, Soliton, nonlinear evolution equations and inverse scattering, Cambridge University Press, 1991.
[2] M.J. Ablowitz, D.J. Kaup, A.C. Newell, and H. Segur, Method for solving the sine-Gordon equation, Physical Review Letters 30 (1973), 1262-1264.
[3] M.J. Ablowitz, D.J. Kaup, A.C. Newell, and Harvey Segur, The inverse scattering transformFourier analysis for nonlinear problems, Studies in Applied Mathematics 53 (1974), no. 4, 249-315.
[4] M.J. Ablowitz and H. Segur, Solitons and the inverse scattering transform, vol. 4, Studies in Applied Mathematics, 1981.
[5] V.E. Adler, Recuttings of polygons, Functional Analysis and Its Applications 27 (1993), no. 2, 141-143.
[6] V.E. Adler, Nonlinear superposition principle for the Jordan NLS equation, Physics Letters A 190 (1994), no. 1, 53-58.
[7] V.E. Adler, Bäcklund transformation for the Krichever-Novikov equation, arXiv preprint solv-int/9707015 (1996).
[8] V.E. Adler, A.I. Bobenko, and Y.B. Suris, Classification of integrable equations on quadgraphs. the consistency approach, Communications in Mathematical Physics 233 (2003), no. 3, 513-543.
[9] V.E. Adler, A.I. Bobenko, and Y.B. Suris, Geometry of Yang-Baxter maps: pencils of conics and quadrirational mappings, Communications in Analysis and Geometry 12 (2004), 9671007.
[10] V.E. Adler and R.I. Yamilov, Explicit auto-transformations of integrable chains, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and General 27 (1994), no. 2, 477.
[11] M. Antonowicz and A.P. Fordy, Super-extensions of energy dependent Schrödinger operators, Communications in Mathematical Physics 124 (1989), no. 3, 487-500.
[12] V.I. Arnol'd, Mathematical methods of classical mechanics, vol. 60, Springer, 1989.
[13] R.J. Baxter, Partition function of the eight-vertex lattice model, Annals of Physics 70 (1972), no. 1, 193-228.
[14] F.A. Berezin, Introduction to superanalysis, vol. 9, Reidel Publishing Co., Dordrecht, 1987.
[15] A.I. Bobenko and Y.B. Suris, Integrable systems on quad-graphs, International Mathematics Research Notices 2002 (2002), no. 11, 573-611.
[16] R. Bury, Automorphic Lie algebras, corresponding integrable systems and their soliton solutions, PhD thesis (2010).
[17] R. Bury and A.V. Mikhailov, Automorphic Lie algebras and corresponding integrable systems. I., to be submitted (2014).
[18] H. Cai, Feng-Min Liu, and Nian-Ning Huang, Hamiltonian formalism of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation, Communications in Theoretical Physics 39 (2003), no. 2, 181-188.
[19] M. Chaichian and P.P. Kulish, On the method of inverse scattering problem and Bäcklund transformations for supersymmetric equations, Physics Letters B 78 (1978), no. 4, 413-416.
[20] J. Cieśliński, An algebraic method to construct the Darboux matrix, Journal of Mathematical Physics 36 (1995), no. 10, 5670-5706.
[21] M. Crampin, Solitons and SL (2, r), Physics Letters A 66 (1978), no. 3, 170-172.
[22] M. Crum, Associated Sturm-Liouville systems, The Quarterly Journal of Mathematics 6 (1955), no. 1, 121-127.
[23] G. Darboux, Sur une proposition relative aux equations linéaires, Comptes rendus de l'Académie des sciences 94 (1882), 1456-1459.
[24] E. Date, M. Jimbo, and T. Miwa, Method for generating discrete soliton equations. $i$, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 51 (1982), no. 12, 4116-4124.
[25] E. Date, M. Jimbo, and T. Miwa, Method for generating discrete soliton equations. ii, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 51 (1982), no. 12, 41254131.
[26] E. Date, M. Jimbo, and T. Miwa, Method for generating discrete soliton equation. iii, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 52 (1983), no. 2, 388-393.
[27] E. Date, M. Jimbo, and T. Miwa, Method for generating discrete soliton equations. iv, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 52 (1983), no. 3, 761-765.
[28] E. Date, M. Jimbo, and T. Miwa, Method for generating discrete soliton equations. v, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 52 (1983), no. 3, 766-771.
[29] A. Dimakis and F. Müller-Hoissen, An algebraic scheme associated with the noncommutative KP hierarchy and some of its extensions, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and General 38 (2005), no. 24, 5453.
[30] A. Dimakis and F. Müller-Hoissen, Solutions of matrix NLS systems and their discretizations: a unified treatment, Inverse Problems 26 (2010), no. 9, 095007.
[31] P.G. Drazin and R.S. Johnson, Solitons: an introduction, vol. 2, Cambridge university press, 1989.
[32] V.G. Drinfeld, On some unsolved problems in quantum group theory, Quantum groups, Springer, 1992, pp. 1-8.
[33] L.D. Faddeev and L.A. Takhtajan, Hamiltonian methods in the theory of solitons, Springer, 2007.
[34] A.P. Fordy, Periodic cluster mutations and related integrable maps, arXiv:1403.8061 (2014).
[35] A.P. Fordy and P. Kassotakis, Integrable maps which preserve functions with symmetries, Journal of Physics. A. Mathematical and Theoretical 46 (2013), no. 20, 205201, 12.
[36] C.S. Gardner, J.M. Greene, M.D. Kruskal, and R.M. Miura, Method for solving the kortewegdevries equation, Physical Review Letters 19 (1967), 1095-1097.
[37] G. Grahovski, S. Konstantinou-Rizos, and A.V. Mikhailov, Grassmann extensions of YangBaxter maps, to be submitted (2014).
[38] G.G. Grahovski and A.V. Mikhailov, Integrable discretisations for a class of nonlinear Schrödinger equations on Grassmann algebras, Physics Letters A 377 (2013), no. 45, 32543259.
[39] B. Grammaticos, A. Ramani, and V. Papageorgiou, Do integrable mappings have the Painlevé property?, Physical Review Letters 67 (1991), no. 14, 1825-1828.
[40] B. Grammaticos, T. Tamizhmani, and Y. Kosmann-Schwarzbach, Discrete integrable systems, Lecture notes in Physics, vol. 644, Springer, 2004.
[41] C. Gu, H. Hu, and Z. Zhou, Darboux transformations in integrable systems: theory and their applications to geometry, Springer, 2006.
[42] J. Hietarinta and C. Viallet, Integrable lattice equations with vertex and bond variables, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and Theoretical 44 (2011), no. 38, 385201.
[43] R. Hirota, Nonlinear partial difference equations. I. A difference analogue of the Kortewegde Vries equation, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 43 (1977), no. 4, 1424-1433.
[44] R. Hirota, Nonlinear partial difference equations. II. Discrete-time Toda equation, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 43 (1977), no. 6, 2074-2078.
[45] R. Hirota, Nonlinear partial difference equations. III. Discrete sine-Gordon equation, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 43 (1977), no. 6, 2079-2086.
[46] R. Hirota, Nonlinear partial difference equations. IV. Bäcklund transformations for the discrete-time Toda equation, Journal of the Physical Society of Japan 45 (1978), no. 1, 321332.
[47] D.J. Kaup and A.C. Newell, An exact solution for a derivative nonlinear Schrödinger equation, Journal of Mathematical Physics 19 (1978), 798.
[48] F. Klein, Ueber binäre formen mit linearen transformationen in sich selbst, Mathematische Annalen 9 (1875), no. 2, 183-208.
[49] S. Konstantinou-Rizos and A.V. Mikhailov, Darboux transformations, finite reduction groups and related Yang-Baxter maps, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and Theoretical 46 (2013), no. 42, 425201.
[50] S. Konstantinou-Rizos, A.V. Mikhailov, and P. Xenitidis, Reduction groups and related integrable difference systems of NLS type, to be submitted (2014).
[51] T.E. Kouloukas and V.G. Papageorgiou, Yang-Baxter maps with first-degree-polynomial $2 \times$ 2 Lax matrices, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and Theoretical 42 (2009), no. 40, 404012.
[52] T.E. Kouloukas and V.G. Papageorgiou, Entwining Yang-Baxter maps and integrable lattices, Banach Centre Publications 93 (2011), 163-175.
[53] T.E. Kouloukas and V.G. Papageorgiou, Poisson Yang-Baxter maps with binomial Lax matrices, Journal of Mathematical Physics 52 (2011), 073502.
[54] B.A. Kupershmidt, Super Korteweg-de Vries equations associated to super extensions of the Virasoro algebra, Physics Letters A 109 (1985), no. 9, 417-423.
[55] P.D. Lax, Integrals of nonlinear equations of evolution and solitary waves, Communications on Pure and Applied Mathematics 21 (1968), 467-490.
[56] D. Levi, Nonlinear differential difference equations as Bäcklund transformations, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and General 14 (1981), no. 5, 1083.
[57] D. Levi and R. Benguria, Bäcklund transformations and nonlinear differential difference equations, Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences 77 (1980), no. 9, 5025-5027.
[58] S. Lombardo, Reductions of integrable equations and automorphic Lie algebras, PhD thesis (2004).
[59] S. Lombardo and A.V. Mikhailov, Reduction groups and automorphic Lie algebras, Communications in Mathematical Physics 258 (2005), no. 1, 179-202.
[60] S. Lombardo and J.A. Sanders, On the classification of automorphic Lie algebras, Communications in Mathematical Physics 299 (2010), no. 3, 793-824.
[61] J.E. Marsden and T.S. Ratiu, Introduction to mechanics and symmetry: a basic exposition of classical mechanical systems, vol. 17, Springer, 1999.
[62] V.B. Matveev and M.A. Salle, Darboux transformations and solitons, Springer-Verlag Berlin, 1991.
[63] A.V. Mikhailov, Integrability of a two-dimensional generalization of the Toda chain, Journal of Experimental and Theoretical Physics Letters 30 (1979), no. 7, 414-418.
[64] A.V. Mikhailov, The reduction problem and the inverse scattering method, Physica D: Nonlinear Phenomena 3 (1981), no. 1, 73-117.
[65] A.V. Mikhailov, A.B. Shabat, and R.I. Yamilov, Extension of the module of invertible transformations. Classification of integrable systems, Communications in Mathematical Physics 115 (1988), no. 1, 1-19.
[66] A.V. Mikhailov, J-P. Wang, and P. Xenitidis, Cosymmetries and nijenhuis recursion operators for difference equations, Nonlinearity 24 (2011), no. 7, 2079.
[67] F. Nijhoff and H. Capel, The discrete Korteweg-de Vries equation, Acta Applicandae Mathematica 39 (1995), no. 1-3, 133-158.
[68] F.W. Nijhoff, Lax pair for the Adler (lattice Krichever-Novikov) system, Physics Letters A 297 (2002), no. 1, 49-58.
[69] F.W. Nijhoff, Discrete systems and integrability, Academic Lecture notes (2006).
[70] F.W. Nijhoff, H.W. Capel, and G.L. Wiersma, Integrable lattice systems in two and three dimensions, Geometric aspects of the Einstein equations and integrable systems (Scheveningen, 1984), Lecture Notes in Phys., vol. 239, Springer, Berlin, 1985, pp. 263302.
[71] F.W. Nijhoff, H.W. Capel, G.L. Wiersma, and G.R.W. Quispel, Bäcklund transformations and three-dimensional lattice equations, Physics Letters A 105 (1984), no. 6, 267-272.
[72] F.W. Nijhoff and A.J. Walker, The discrete and continuous Painlevé vi hierarchy and the Garnier systems, Glasgow Mathematical Journal 43 (2001), no. a, 109-123.
[73] PJ Olver and VV Sokolov, Non-abelian integrable systems of the derivative nonlinear Schrödinger type, Inverse Problems 14 (1998), no. 6, L5-L8.
[74] V.G. Papageorgiou, F.W. Nijhoff, and H.W. Capel, Integrable mappings and nonlinear integrable lattice equations, Physics Letters A 147 (1990), no. 2, 106-114.
[75] V.G. Papageorgiou, Y.B. Suris, A.G. Tongas, and A.P. Veselov, On quadrirational YangBaxter maps, Symmetry, Integrability and Geometry: Methods and Applications 6 (2010), no. 033, 9 .
[76] V.G. Papageorgiou and A.G. Tongas, Yang-Baxter maps and multi-field integrable lattice equations, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and Theoretical 40 (2007), no. 42, 12677.
[77] V.G. Papageorgiou, A.G. Tongas, and A.P. Veselov, Yang-Baxter maps and symmetries of integrable equations on quad-graphs, Journal of Mathematical Physics 47 (2006), 083502.
[78] G.R.W. Quispel, F.W. Nijhoff, H.W. Capel, and J. der Linden, Bäklund transformations and singular integral equations, Physica A: Statistical Mechanics and its Applications 123 (1984), no. 2, 319-359.
[79] G.R.W. Quispel, F.W. Nijhoff, H.W. Capel, and J. van der Linden, Linear integral equations and nonlinear difference-difference equations, Phys. A 125 (1984), no. 2-3, 344-380.
[80] C. Rogers and W.K. Schief, Bäcklund and Darboux transformations: geometry and modern applications in soliton theory, vol. 30, Cambridge University Press, 2002.
[81] E.K. Sklyanin, Classical limits of the SU (2)-invariant solutions of the Yang-Baxter equation, Journal of Soviet Mathematics 40 (1988), no. 1, 93-107.
[82] Y.B. Suris, Bi-Hamiltonian structure of the qd algorithm and new discretizations of the Toda lattice, Physics Letters A 206 (1995), no. 3, 153-161.
[83] Y.B. Suris and A.P. Veselov, Lax matrices for Yang-Baxter maps, Journal of Nonlinear Mathematical Physics 10 (2003), no. sup2, 223-230.
[84] T.R. Taha and M.J. Ablowitz, Analytical and numerical aspects of certain nonlinear evolution equations. I. Analytical, Journal of Computational Physics 55 (1984), no. 2, 192202.
[85] T.R. Taha and M.J. Ablowitz, Analytical and numerical aspects of certain nonlinear evolution equations. II. Numerical, nonlinear Schrödinger equation, Journal of Computational Physics 55 (1984), no. 2, 203-230.
[86] T.R. Taha and M.J. Ablowitz, Analytical and numerical aspects of certain nonlinear evolution equations. III. Numerical, Korteweg-de Vries equation, Journal of Computational Physics 55 (1984), no. 2, 231-253.
[87] A.P. Veselov, Integrable maps, Russian Mathematical Surveys 46 (1991), no. 5, 1-51.
[88] A.P. Veselov, Yang-baxter maps and integrable dynamics, Physics Letters A 314 (2003), no. 3, 214-221.
[89] A.P. Veselov, Yang-Baxter maps: dynamical point of view, Journal of the Mathematical Society of Japan 17 (2007), 145-167.
[90] H.D. Wahlquist and F.B. Estabrook, Bäcklund transformation for solutions of the Kortewegde Vries equation, Physical Review Letters 31 (1973), no. 23, 1386.
[91] R.I. Yamilov, Symmetries as integrability criteria for differential difference equations, Journal of Physics A: Mathematical and General 39 (2006), no. 45, R541.
[92] C.N. Yang, Some exact results for the many-body problem in one dimension with repulsive delta-function interaction, Physical Review Letters 19 (1967), no. 23, 1312.
[93] V.E. Zakharov and A.B. Shabat, Exact theory of two-dimensional self-focusing and onedimensional self-modulation of waves in nonlinear media, Zhournal Eksperimental'noi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki 61 (1971), no. 1, 118-134.
[94] V.E. Zakharov ed., What is integrability?, Springer, 1991.

## Index

F-list, 12, 70, 71
$H$-list, 11, 70, 71
$Q$-list, 11
$\mathbb{C P}^{1}, 11,12$
$\mathbb{D}_{2}$-reduction group, 46
$\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction group, 29
$\mathbb{Z}_{2}$-reduction group, 42
$\mathbb{Z}_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduction group, 29
3D consistency, 9, 13, 69
3D consistent equation(s), 9, 10
3D-consistency, 8

Abel-Jacobi-Liouville identity, 33
Adler-Yamilov
map, $14,82,83$
type of system, 52
auto-Bäcklund transformation(s), 13, 20
for SG equation, 21, 22
automorphic Lie algebras, 29, 115

Bäcklund transformation(s), 13, 15, 19, 20, 25, 38, 115
for Laplace equation, 21
for $S G$ equation, 21
for the PKdV equation, 24
spatial part ( $x$-part), 22
temporal part ( $t$-part), 22
Bianchi's
commuting diagram, 34
permutability, 15, 21-24, 27
bosonic limit, 106, 109

Casimir function(s), 75-77, 79, 89
Cauchy problem, 2
Cauchy-Riemann relations, 20
complete integrability, 79
completely integrable, $13,79,83,84,87-89$
conservation law(s), 13, 50, 54, 55, 57-59, 61, 115

Darboux matrix(-ces), $31,34,38,49,50,75,80$, $81,84,86,89,90,92,93,96,102,115$
for deformation of DNLS, 46, 47
for DNLS, 43, 44
for NLS, 39, 42
gauge equivalent, 117
Darboux theorem, 16
Darboux transformation, 39
Darboux transformation(s), 5, 13-16, 25, 30, $31,38,80,83,115$
rank, 32
deformation of DNLS
Darboux matrix, 47
equation, 13, 30, 46, 89
Lax operator, 45
spectral parameter independent Darboux matrix, 46
degenerate orbits, 29, 30
derivative nonlinear Schrödinger (DNLS)
Darboux matrix, 43, 44
equation, $13,30,42,84$
Lax operator, 41
difference equation
six-point, 56
difference equation(s), 37, 115
six-point, 56
differential-difference equation(s), 37, 39, 41, 43, 47, 101, 103, 104
discrete
Lax pair, 34
Toda equation, 52, 53, 58, 59
discrete (potential) KdV equation, 9, 11
even (Bosonic) element(s), 96
even variable(s), 97, 98, 104
evolution equation(s), 3-5
first integral(s), 13, 14, 37, 41, 44, 45, 48, 50-$52,55-58,60,78,80-83,85,87,88$, 90, 96, 102, 104, 106, 109, 115

Fourier transform, 2, 6
Fréchet derivative, 36
fractional-linear transformations, 29
gauge transformation, 31, 39, 43, 47, 100, 103
gauge-like transformation(s), 13, 19
generalised symmetries, 37
generic orbits, 29
Grassmann algebra(s), 95, 96, 99
Grassmann commutativity, 96
Grassmann extention(s)
of Adler-Yamilov map, 100, 106
of Darboux matrix(-ces), 95, 99, 100
of Yang-Baxter maps, 105
hetero-Bäcklund transformation(s), 13, 20
infinitensimal symmetry, 36
integrable system(s), 15
discrete, $7,13,27,29,30,38,49,115$
of difference equations, 115
invariant leaves, 76, 80, 84, 87
inverse scattering transform, 2-6

Kac-Moody algebra, 29
KdV equation, 2, 4, 5, 13, 15, 18, 24
Bäcklund transformation, 24
Darboux transformation, 17
initial value problem, 3
Lax pair, 4, 5

Laplace equation, 21
Lax equation, $4,66,67,77,80,81,85,87,90$, 93, 94

Lax matrix(-ces), 66, 78, 83, 86, 92
strong, 67, 93, 94
Lax operator(s), 13, 29-32, 89, 115
AKNS type, 1, 7, 30
for deformation of DNLS equation, 45, 89
for DNLS equation, 41,84
for NLS equation, 38, 81
for NLS type operators, 115
Lax pair, 4, 20
for KdV equation, 4, 5, 18
spatial part ( $x$-part), 4, 13, 31
for DNLS equation, 42
for NLS equation, 39
for the deformation of DNLS equation, 46
temporal part ( $t$-part), 4
Lax representation, 4, 5, 11, 75, 77, 78, 83, 88 strong, 68

Liouville integrability, 75, 79, 93, 94
Liouville integrable, 79
Liouville's formula, 33

Möbius transformations, 12
Möbius-equivalent maps, 70
modified Volterra chain, 44
monodromy matrix, $63,72,74,78,79,113,114$
multidimensional consistency, $2,8,28,69,80$
multidimensionally consistent, 116
noncommutative extension(s), 14
of Darboux matrix(-ces), 99
of DNLS operator, 102
of integrable equations, 95
of NLS operator, 100
nonlinear evolution equation(s), 4
nonlinear Fourier transform, 2
nonlinear Schrödinger (NLS)
Darboux matrix, 39
equation, $6,13,30,80,81$
Lax operator, 38
spectral parameter independent Darboux matrix, 39,42
nonlinear superposition principle, 22, 24
odd (Fermionic) element(s), 96, 97
odd variable(s), 97-100, 102, 104, 107, 110
differentiation rule, 97

Poisson
bracket, 75-77, 79, 84, 89
martix, 89
matrix, $77,79,84$
structure, 80, 82
quadrirational map(s), 11, 12
quadrirational maps, 70, 71
rank of Darboux transformation, 32
reduction group, 13, 29, 84
$\mathbb{Z}_{2}$ (cyclic), 29
$\mathbb{Z}_{2} \times \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ (Klein), 29
dihedral, 46
refactorisation problem, 116
refactorisation problem(s), 13, 66, 75, 78, 80, 81, 93, 98, 105
scatering data, 2
scattering data, 5
Schrödinger operator, 4
sine-Gordon equation, 13, 21, 22
Bäcklund transformation, 21
singularity confinement, 8
six-point difference equation, 56
soliton, 2
Sturm-Liouville problem, 13, 16
superdeterminant, 97
supertrace, $97,113,114$
symmetry, 36
symplectic leaf(-ves), 82, 89
time-independent Schrödinger equation, 4, 16
Toda (type) equation(s), 13, 52, 53, 58, 59, 115
transfer dynamics, 13, 64, 72
transfer map(s), 63, 72-74
transfer matrix, 74

Yang-Baxter (YB) equation, 13, 63-67, 69-72, 80, 82
parametric, 65
Yang-Baxter (YB) map(s), 11-14, 63-69, 72,
73, 75-80, 82-86, 90, 92-94, 116
entwining, 72
generalisations, 92
linear, 92
linear approximation, 92
linearised, 92
parametric, 64-66, 70-72, 83, 88, 91
quadrirational, 70, 71
reversible, 67
Yang-Baxter equation, 12, 63
Yang-Baxter property, 12


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ They initially called it "solitron", but at the same time a company was trading with the same name and therefore had to remove the " r ".

[^1]:    ${ }^{1}$ Potential $u$ may depend on a temporal parameter $t$, namely $u=u(x, t)$.

[^2]:    ${ }^{2}$ Potential $u[1]$ is a solution of the KdV equation, since it can be readily shown that the pair ( $y[1], u[1]$ ) also satisfies the temporal part of the Lax pair for KdV.

[^3]:    ${ }^{1}$ By nontrivial we mean that $\lambda$ cannot be eliminated by a gauge transformation. For instance, matrix $\left(\begin{array}{cc}* & \lambda^{-1} \\ & *\end{array}\right)$ has trivial dependence on $\lambda$ since

    $$
    \left(\begin{array}{ll}
    \lambda^{1 / 2} & \\
    & \lambda^{-1 / 2}
    \end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{cc}
    * & \lambda^{-1} \\
    & *
    \end{array}\right)\left(\begin{array}{ll}
    \lambda^{1 / 2} & \\
    & \lambda^{-1 / 2}
    \end{array}\right)^{-1}=\left(\begin{array}{ll}
    * & 1 \\
    & *
    \end{array}\right)
    $$

[^4]:    ${ }^{2}$ For simplicity of the notation, we sometimes omit the dependence on the potentials $p$ and $q$, i.e. $\mathcal{L}(p, q ; \lambda) \equiv \mathcal{L}(\lambda)$.
    ${ }^{3}$ It is also known as Abel-Jacobi-Liouville identity.

[^5]:    ${ }^{4}$ Operator $D_{\Delta}:=\sum_{i, j \in \mathbb{Z}} \frac{\partial \Delta}{\partial \mathbf{u}_{i j}} \mathcal{S}^{i} \mathcal{T}^{j}$ is called the Fréchet derivative.

[^6]:    ${ }^{5}$ The full Lax pair of the associated PDE can be found in [16, 17].

[^7]:    ${ }^{6}$ This choice was made in order to retrieve polynomial expressions in (3.78).

[^8]:    ${ }^{1}$ Reprint of the 1987 edition.

